

NATIONAL ARCHIVES & PUBLIC RECORDS SERVICES  
OF PAPUA NEW GUINEA

# **PATROL REPORTS**

DISTRICT: CENTRAL

STATION: Kairuku

VOLUME No: 1

ACCESSION No: 496.

1942 - 1944

Filmed by/for the National Archives of Papua New Guinea,  
PORT MORESBY - 1989.

Sole Custodian: National Archives of Papua New Guinea.

[Also includes one report from 1945]



# Papua New Guinea Patrol Reports

Digitized version made available by



**Copyright:** Government of Papua New Guinea. This digital version made under a license granted by the National Archives and Public Records Services of Papua New Guinea.

**Use:** This digital copy of the work is intended to support research, teaching, and private study.

**Constraints:** This work is protected by the U.S. Copyright Law (Title 17, U.S.C.) and the laws of Papua New Guinea. Use of this work beyond that allowed by "fair use" requires written permission of the National Archives of Papua New Guinea. Responsibility for obtaining permissions and any use and distribution of this work rests exclusively with the user and not the UC San Diego Library.

**Note on digitized version:** A microfiche copy of these reports is held at the University of California, San Diego (Mandeville Special Collections Library, MSS 0215). The digitized version presented here reflects the quality and contents of the microfiche. Problems which have been identified include misfiled reports, out-of-order pages, illegible text; these problems have been rectified whenever possible. The original reports are in the National Archives of Papua New Guinea (Accession no. 496).



PATROL REPORT OF: KAIRUKU

ACCESSION No. 496

VOL. No: 1: 1942/44NUMBER OF REPORTS: Cont...

REPORT NO:	FOLIO	OFFICER CONDUCTING PATROL	AREA PATROLLED	MAPS/ PHOTOS	PERIOD OF PATROL
1] DS: 30.3.8	1-6	ASHON N.R. + JACKA W.O.	Kambiri, Menga, Garima, Vanapa - Kanosia.		13/8/42 - 5/11/42
2] " 3.6	7-14	O'MALLEY. L.J. Lt.	Mekeo & Waima		12/10/42 - 25/10/42
3] DS: 30.3.9	15-19	" " "	Mekeo District		13/11/42 - 19/11/42
4] DS: 30.3.12	20-29	CRMSBY. R.G. "	Mekeo, Kusimaipa - Kenuama Area.	map.	2/11/42 - 8/12/42
5] DS: 30.3.11	30-35	O'MALLEY. L.T. "	Mekeo District.		2/12/42 - 30/12/42
6] DS: 30.3.15	36-40	CRMSBY. R.G. "	Kairuku - Terapo via Mekeo plain.		1/12/42 - 30/12/42
7] DS: 30.3.17	41-46	" " "	Coastal Island from Yule Island - Leso.	"	2/1/43 - 19/1/43
8] DS: 30.3.18	47-50	ASHON. N.R. &	Orange - Kanosia		11/1/43 - 30/1/43
9] DS: 30.3.23	51-55	RODGERS. G. Capt.	Kairuku - Gailala		5/3/43 - 22/3/43
10] DS: 30.3.24	56-64	O'CONNOR. B.M. Lt.	Mekeo, Waima - Kivori District		15/3/43 - 3/3/43
11] DS: 30.3.27	65-70	RICH. C.H.	Eddi Creek - Wau Creek.		26/4/43 - 13/5/43
12] DS: 30.3.28	71-80	PRICE. J.B.	Mekeo District		10/5/43 - 20/5/43
13] DS: 30.3.29	81-84	" " "	Kairuku - Waima - Terapo		22/5/43 - 6/6/43
14] 1 of 1943/44	85-87	HAYES. B.B. Sgt.	Lalala Pipi - Kerema		6/6/43 - 11/6/43
15] 2 - 1943/44	88-91	PRICE. J.B. WOII	Mekeo District + Waima villages.		11/6/43 - 21/6/43
16] 2 - "	92-97	RICH. C.H. Lt.	Terapo Coast District		8/6/43 - 14/6/43
17] 3 - "	98-100	HAYES. B.B. Sgt.	Lalafipi and Maiva		15/6/43 - 21/6/43
18] 4 - "	101-113	SCOTT. N.A. Capt.	Gailala Area & Return		25/4/43 - 21/7/43
19] 5 - "	114-116.	THOMPSON. N.H. Major.	Kanosia, Hisiu sub district		28/6/43 - 3/7/43.
20] 6 - 1943/44	117-119	RICH. C.H. Lt.	Terapo & Coastal District		28/6/43 - 3/7/43
21] 7 - "	120-124	BERGIN. M.W. Lt.	Villages west of Kerema.		25/6/43 - 5/7/43
22] 10 - "	125-128	SCOTT. N.A. CPL.	Bulldog - Terapo		22/7/43 - 28/7/43
23] 10 - "	129-130	WEARNE. G.R.G. "	Villages East of Kerema.		1/7/43 - 6/7/43.



PATROL REPORT OF: KAIRUKU.

ACCESSION No. 496

VOL. No: 1 : 1942/43. NUMBER OF REPORTS: 42

REPORT NO:	FOLIO	OFFICER CONDUCTING PATROL	AREA PATROLLED	MAPS/ PHOTOS	PERIOD OF PATROL
[24] 11-1943/44	131-135	HARDY. G.P. Lt.	Pinupaka - Iokea + Apinaipi		9/8/43 - 20/8/43
[25] 13- "	136-141	RICH C.H. Lt.	Wau Edeli Creek.		24/7/43 - 7/8/43
[26] 14- "	142-146	JACKA. H.F. Woi	Ononge - Kambisa		26/7/43 - 6/8/43
[27] 15- "	147-152	HARDY. G.P. Lt.	Mekeo		24/8/43 - 1/9/43
[28] 16- "	153-157	BERGIN. M.W. "	villages - West Kerema, Orokoro - up Vaiala.		14/7/43 - 21/8/43
[29] 17- "	158-164	<del>BOWEN</del> MONTGOMERY. A. LT.	Bulldog - Mangobi-a.		21/8/43 - 1/9/43
[30] 18-1943/44	165-176	SCOTT. N.H. CPL.	Hengin - Wau Bulldog road.		17/8/43 - 25/8/43
[31] 18- "	177-179	THOMPSON. W.H.H. Major.	Kerema - Terapo.		9/9/43 - 15/9/43
[32] 19- "	180-184	O'CONNOR. P.M. Capt.	Mekeo		29/9/43 - 2/10/43
[33] 22- "	185-188	HARDY. G.P. Lt.	Voilala Area.		25/9/43 - 4/10/43
[34] 23- "	189-190	THOMPSON. W.H.H. Major.	Voilala + Kambisa (Ononge) Police Camp.		6/10/43 - 30/10/43
[35] 24- "	191-195	O'MALLEY. J.O. Capt.	Mekeo Inland mekeo Area		22/11/43 - 8/12/43
[36] 27- "	196-200	GRELAN. R.M. Woi	Bulldog, via Mirivase (Lakekamu river.)		19/4/44 - 4/5/44
[37] 28- "	201-208	GRAHAMSLAN. T. Major	Kairuku - Voilala.		6/5/44 - 1/6/44
[38] 30-1943/44	209-214	JACKA. H.F. Woi	Mekeo District		8/5/44 - 16/5/44
[39] 31- "	215-218	FRITHORN. B.N. Capt.	Mekeo - Norma villages		17/1/44 - 28/1/44.
[40] 31-3.3.	219-220	JACKA. H.F. Woi	Manu Manu		21/6/44 - 24/6/44
[41] 31.7.4	221-222	THOMPSON. W.H.H.	Hisu + Kanosia Areas.		28/2/45 - 4/3/45.
[42] 31.8/3.3	223-228	SNOOK. E.R. Lt.	Track report Port Moresby Bulldog.		17/10/43-
[ ]					
[ ]					
[ ]					
[ ]					



CENTRAL DISTRICT

KAIRUKU SUBDISTRICT

PATROL REPORTS:

1942-1943

1943-1944



DS.

30 / 3 / 18

1942/43

P/R No.

STATION :- CNONGE.

DISTRICT :- LAKEKAMU

AREA PATROLLED :- KAMBIBI, MENGA, GARIMA

VENADA VALLEY - KANDSIA

PATROL OFFICER :- <sup>LT. W.R. DISHON</sup> WO & JACKA.

DATE :- 13 Aug / 5 Nov. 1942..

KAMBISI  
12 Oct 42

The District Officer,  
KAIRUKU

REPORT ON PATROL CONDUCTED BY LIEUT. W. R. DISHON  
AND W.O. II. JACKA.

Appended please find Patrol Report with which is appended the Monthly report for the ONONGE POLICE CAMP.

PURPOSES OF PATROL Establishment of Signal Stations at KAMBIBI, IONGAI (MENGAI) and KUANE (GARIMA)  
Transfer of 16 prisoners from KAIRUKU to GOILALA Gaol.  
Establishment of POLICE CAMP at KAMBISI  
Attempt to open carrier track from ONONGE VENAPA Valley to KANOSIA.

DIARY.

Thursday Aug. 13. Lieut. Dishon, W.O. Jacka, Sgt Rutledge Corporals MoQuilty & Powderham and six Signals personnel to AROPOKINA by launch "GAWA". Cpl. API and A.C. TIDAMO reported in late afternoon with carriers from AIPEANA and INAWI. F.I.B. Sgt. SAMAI and party ~~ex~~ KOKODA reported and instructed to proceed to KAIRUKU.

FRIDAY 14. AIPEANA and INAWI carriers and sixteen OMALE prisoners carried portion of the cargo to KUBUNA. Cpl. API and A.C. AVEIA despatched to BIOTO and INUABUI for more carriers. European personnel and remainder of stores to KUBUNA by motor lorry. Courtesy Catholic Mission & Br. George. A.C. SINAMAINO reported at KUBUNA with carriers from RAPA, MOU and BEREINA.

SATURDAY 15 W.O. Jacka, European Personnel and available carriers left for IKE IKE. A.C. AVEIA reported that no carriers were in BIOTO village as they were carrying stores for W.O. Williams. Lieut. Dishon left for INUABUI arriving 5 p.m.

SUNDAY 16. Lieut. O'Malley and W.O. Hardy arrived INUABUI en route for TERAPC. 82 carriers secured. These left with Lieut. Dishon for KUBUNA and camped. Cpl. API reported with eight more carriers.

MONDAY 17. Lieut. Dishon to ONOBA. Instructed Village Constable of LAPEKA to pick up remaining stores at KUBUNA.

TUESDAY. 18. To MATSIKA Rest House via OBA OBA. W.O. Jacka and remainder of party at MATSIKA. Met Lieut. Eccleston. LAPEKA carriers reported with remainder of stores.

WEDNESDAY. 19. Complete party proceeded to DEVA DEVA and camped.

THURSDAY. 20. To MAFULU and camped.

FRIDAY. 21. W.O. Jacka with 4 GOILALA and 2 KAIRUKU Police left for KONE en route GOILALA. Escorting 16 prisoners. Remainder of party to FANE and camped.



(2)

SATURDAY. 22. To MAVE and camped. Purchased native foods from MONDO people.

SUNDAY. 23 To ONONGE arriving in heavy rain. Letter to W.O. Round at KAMBISI.

MONDAY. 24. Mekeo and RORO carriers departed. Preparing stores and gear for three signal stations. W.O. Round arrived. Summoned KAMBISI and ONONGE carriers.

TUESDAY. 25. W.O. Round with Sgt. Rutledge and party left for URONO, en route KUAME. Lieut. Dishon and remaining two parties to KAMBISI. Cpl. Powderham and party established at KAMBISI Rest House.

WEDNESDAY 26. With Cpl. McQuilty and party to KAILAPA Rest House and camped. Purchased native foods for carriers crossing Wharton Range.

THURSDAY. 27. To camping place IMOROGO'MANE on western fall of Wharton Range - 8,400 ft.

FRIDAY. 28. To summit Wharton Range. - 10,000 ft. Descended to CHIRIMA headwaters. Ascended to IONGAI rest house. 6,500 ft.

SATURDAY. 29 Lieut. Dishon returned to camp site IMOROGO'MANE.

SUNDAY. 30. Via KAILAPA to KAMBISI and camped.

MONDAY. 31. Met W.O. Jacka at ONONGE en route to warn carriers for road work. Paid off carriers. W.O. Soblusky and an European civilian (RINGLE) ex IOMA at ONONGE. EVESE Village Constable to GOILALA with radio to D.O. KAIRUKU.

TUESDAY SEPTEMBER 1. At ONONGE. W.O. Soblusky and party left for TAPA, en route KAIRUKU. Lieut. Dishon to nearby villages to instruct carriers to attend on Thursday for a trip to KANOSIA. Cpl. API and A.C. AVEIA to OMALE and ENENDE for carriers.

WEDNESDAY. 2. W.O. Jacka returned. GINARA and EVESE carriers reported.

THURSDAY 3. Lieut. Dishon, W.O. Jacka and party to ORO. Cpl. API and A.C. AVEIA reported OMALE and ENENDE carriers had run away into the bush and refused to carry.

FRIDAY. 4. Lieut. Dishon and police to KASE for carriers. Only 18 secured. W.O. Jacka secured 21 ORO carriers. To SIGUFE and camped.

SATURDAY. 5. To Mission Rest House at UI where Fr. Dubuy was constructing road with KAILAPA labourers.

SUNDAY. 6. Ascended to peak KUIMBIKUM approx 7,000 ft. Descended to IDE River and proceeded down stream for one hour. Then ascended to camping spot DONGO in bush. Camped in heavy rain.

MONDAY. 7. Descended to MANE River cutting track through bush and proceeded downstream for five hours. Thence crossed river and climbed to camping stop on ridge. Camp at 3.30. p.m.

TUESDAY. 8. To top of range and endeavoured to cut track through in direction of KANOSIA. Followed headwaters of stream and eventually reached a large stream flowing south. Followed this and camped at 4.30 p.m.

WEDNESDAY. 9.

(3)

WEDNESDAY 9. Climbed ridge on right bank of stream and proceeded down this until VAIMAURI Plantation. Reached there at 11.30 a.m. Letters from D.O. KAIRUKU received. Nineteen New Guinea Police and L/Cpl. SAFE reported.

THURSDAY 10. At KANOSIA preparing stores for transport. Correspondence.

FRIDAY 11. At KANOSIA

SATURDAY 12. Capt. Thompson, Captain Coonan and party arrived with coastal carriers.

SUNDAY 13. With Capt. Thompson & party to camp on KANOSIA Creek

MONDAY 14. To camp known as KUIN on ridge across MANDE River.

TUESDAY 15. To camp on YALOGÉ River

WEDNESDAY 16. To camp on UI Creek

THURSDAY 17. To camp on Fr. Dubuy's road on the YALOGÉ -VENAPA Divide.

FRIDAY 18. To ORO Rest House and camped.

SATURDAY 19. To ONONGE

SUNDAY 20. At ONONGE

MONDAY 21. W.O. Jacka to join Fr. Dubuy in effort to locate track to KANOSIA. A.C. AVEIA to KANOSIA.

TUESDAY 22. Capt. Thompson and Lieut. Toogood to MAVE. Lieut. Dishon to KAMBISI.

WEDNESDAY 23. Cpl. API and police remaining at KAMBISI to commence construction of camp. Lieut. Dishon to OMALE to collect carriers.

THURSDAY 24. At OMALE

FRIDAY 25. At OMALE

SATURDAY 26. To ENENDE

SUNDAY 27. At ENENDE

MONDAY 28. To SIGUPE with 40 OMALE and ENENDE carriers.

TUESDAY 29. At SIGUPE

WEDNESDAY 30. A.C. AVEIA and carriers arrived ex. KANOSIA.

THURSDAY OCTOBER 1. Lieut. Dishon with police and 56 carriers to UI Rest House.

FRIDAY 2. To camping place at DONGO

SATURDAY 3. To camp on MANDE River along way out by Fr. Dubuy and W.O. Jacka. Met. Fr. Dubuy returning ex KANOSIA.

SUNDAY 4. Downstream MANDE for two hours to where KUIN ridge meets MANDE. Crossed MANDE. To headwaters KANOSIA Creek and thence to KANOSIA. W.O. Jacka at KANOSIA.



(4)

MONDAY 5. At KANOSIA preparing stores. A.C. OREIA reported  
ex KAIRUKU with mail and stores..

TUESDAY 6. W.O. Jacka to await Capt. Coonan. Lieut. Dishon  
to camping place on KUIN ridge at 4.p.m.

WEDNESDAY 7. To YALOGÉ River and thence to camping place on the  
UI Creek at 4 p.m.

THURSDAY 8. To YALOGÉ - VENAPA Divide and thence to SIGUFE  
Rest House.

FRIDAY 9. To ONONGE

SATURDAY 10. To KAMBISI. Delivered stores and thence to camp site.

SUNDAY 11. At KAMBISI Police Camp site. Correspondence and  
construction.

MONDAY 12 to FRIDAY 16 inclusive. At KAMBISI  
Routine and Camp Construction.

SATURDAY 17. W.O. Jacka arrived.

SUNDAY 18. With Cpl. API and police to KAMBISI to secure  
carriers for trip to KANOSIA.

MONDAY 19. Cpl. API and party left for KANOSIA. Lieut. Dishon  
and police and party to URUNU. All natives at dance at WAITAPE.

TUESDAY 20. To WAITAPE. Instructed natives to finish dance  
and supply carriers.

WEDNESDAY 21. At WAITAPE

THURSDAY 22. At WAITAPE

FRIDAY 23. To URUNU with WAITAPE carriers.

SATURDAY 24. At URUNU

SUNDAY 25. To GINARA via ONONGE with WAITAPE and URUNU carriers.

MONDAY. 26. To SIGUFE/

TUESDAY 27. Via UI Mission Rest House to camp on IDE River.

WEDNESDAY 28. To camp on MANDE River.

THURSDAY 29. Lieut. Dishon and portion of party to KANOSIA  
remainder of party camped on KANOSIA Creek.

FRIDAY 30. All carriers arrived at KANOSIA.

SATURDAY 31. At KANOSIA preparing stores for return.

SUNDAY NOVEMBER 1. To camp on KUIN Ridge.

MONDAY 2. To camp on UI River

TUESDAY 3. To SIGUFE

WEDNESDAY 4. To ONONGE

THURSDAY 5. To KAMBISI Camp.

GENERAL.

Report on the establishment of Spotting Stations is attached. To date the personnel at the newly established camps have been occupied with the transport of stores from KANOSIA. Three times the trip has been made under European supervision, and twice under charge of police N.C.O.s.

Considerable difficulty has been experienced in securing carriers from the ONONGE area to proceed to KANOSIA - a certain element give no trouble at all in this connection, but the remainder still require education in the right direction. It is understood that from now on the number of carriers required will not be so great and this will allow time to concentrate on the improvement of the track to KANOSIA via the IDE and MANDE Rivers, and will allow more extensive patrolling of the villages in the area.

The natives in the area do not appear to be unduly worried by the present state of affairs in this territory. They have affiliations in the CHIRIMA VALLEY and still exchange visits with the inhabitants there, who are (or have been) more closely situated as regards proximity to the scene of action and therefore more likely to be upset thereby.

POLICE.

The Papuan members of the force stationed here are accepted by the natives without hesitancy, but the New Guinea establishment are rather strange and harder for them to understand, especially as most of these police are raw recruits, and, as yet, not fully conversant with their duties.

Signed. W.R. Dishon Lieut.

A.D.O. O.I.C.

ONONGE (KAMBISI) POLICE POST/

True Copy

*W.H.H. Jagan*

D.O.

KAIRUKU

*W.H.H.*  
*23/11*



DS.

30 1 3 16

1942/43

GOIKALA ONONGA

CTI

42-43

43-44

P/R No.

STATION: ONONGA

DISTRICT: LAKEKARU

AREA PATROLLED: MEKEO & WAIMA DISTRICTS

PATROL OFFICER: LT. L.J. O'MALLEY

DATE: 12/25 OCTOBER 1942..

W.A.M. 7  
D.O.  
30 X 42

REPORT OF PATROL MADE BY L. James O'Malley,  
TO THE MEKEO AND WAIMA DISTRICTS FOR THE  
PURPOSE OF ARRESTING DESERTERS AND OBTAINING  
NATIVE LABOURERS FOR BULLDOG AREA.

----ooo+++

MONDAY 12th.

Acting upon the instructions of the District Officer, to proceed to the Mekeo area to arrest deserters from Bulldog, and to obtain recruits (Native Labour) for the Bulldog area, I left the station at 8.30 a.m. on board M.V. GAWA and after two and half hours arrived at Aropikina. Unloaded stores and remained at Aropikina until the arrival of W/o Patrol Officer Round who was expected to arrive from the Gollala Police Camp. At 2 p.m. W/o Round arrived, with over 200 hundred mountain carriers. Stores were sorted out and packed for the return journey to the police camp.

TUESDAY 13th.

W/o Round left for the police camp at 8.30 a.m. A few stores were left behind, and arrangements were made for them to be transported later on. At 10.30 a.m. I left Aropikina and proceeded to Inauabua village, where I made payments to the various natives for previous carrying trips to the mountains. Informed the people that it was now time to begin their new rice areas, also informed the young men that I would need native labourers for the Bulldog area, and that I would collect them in a day or so time. Inspected the village and informed the village policeman that he would have to get the village cleaned. There were one or two houses which needed repairing, The rest house was in good condition, and a new garden has been planted around the officers house, corn and sweet potatoes. Proceeded along the motor road to INAWAIA, but found this village deserted except for a few women and children. The village constable reported and informed me that all the people were away in the bush hunting. Instructed him to go and get them all back to the village, and also to have the village cleaned up. At INAWAIA learnt that numbers of deserters were returning to their villages from the Bulldog area, and police were sent to various villages to collect these men. A number of labourers were also recruited for the Bulldog area.

WEDNESDAY 14th to SUNDAY 18th.

Numbers of deserters and a large number of new labourers were arrested and obtained for the Bulldog area. Eboa, Jesubaibua and INAWAIA and INAUABUI villages were visited several times, and deserters and new labourers were picked up. On Sunday I returned to BIOTO with the first batch of deserters and labourers and forwarded them to Kairuku per canoe. I returned to INAWAIA and made preparations to leave for the upper Mekeo on MONDAY Morning. Up to the present 75 new labourers were engaged for Bulldog and 15 deserters arrested. In these villages, the older men have been instructed to cut the rice areas for the coming season.

MONDAY 19th.

Got away from INAWAIA early morning per motor lorry and proceeded to ORIROPETENA villages, here arrested men from Bulldog. Sent police to BEBEO village and they returned at 11.p.m. with more deserters. Crossed the St Joseph River, and proceeded to BEIPA rest house. The village police from the various villages arrived and reported. I instructed them that they were to bring in all the deserters from Bulldog, and that I wanted a large number of natives to go to work at Bulldog. Inspected the villages during the afternoon, and found them clean and tidy. Sent four natives to hospital to Kairuku for examination. These men were deserters from Bulldog, but appeared to me to be unfit for service. The V.C's in this area have also been instructed to prepare their areas for rice.

TUESDAY 20th.

Remained at Beipa, signing on boys for work at Bulldog.



Tuesday continued. Heavy rains during the afternoon, and the St Joseph River is in flood again. The gardens around this area are at present doing well, and the rain now will improve them, a large quantity of food purchased from the natives of the various villages.

WEDNESDAY 21st

Remained at BEIPA and arrested more deserters, also obtained a number of new recruits. Heavy rains again during the afternoon. The rest house here is in good condition, and during the past two days the natives have been clearing an area around the rest house for garden purposes.

THURSDAY 22nd.

Leaving BEIPA proceeded along the road to INAWI village, found this village very clean, no doubt the people knew that the Officer would be passing through and had it nice and clean for him. After leaving INAWI, and about twenty minutes from the village, found that the St Joseph River had flooded the road, and for a distance of about 200 yards we had to walk through three to four feet of water. On arrival at BEREINA, found that all the people were away, called out to them to come in, but by five o'clock none of them had arrived. Left police in the village to arrest the deserters. I proceeded to Waima, where I made camp at 6 o'clock. Found that Lieut Atkinson had not arrived. At 8.30 a policeman arrived from Lieut Atkinson and informed me that the Officer would arrive in the morning.

FRIDAY 23rd.

Friday was spent in rounding up some deserters from Bulldog and from the Kokoda road area, and a number of them were arrested. A number of new labourers were also obtained for the Bulldog area. Lieut Atkinson arrived at 11. a.m.

SATURDAY 24th.

Spent the day signing on labourers. Handed over to Lieut Atkinson a number of deserters and new labourers, and Lieut Atkinson sent them on to Terapo with a police escort. The number of deserters arrested numbered 90, and the new labourers numbered 205. Before leaving WAIMA a number of KIVORI natives came in to sign on, these went with Lt Atkinson ~~main~~ party. Received a letter from the District Officer to return to Kairuku.

SUNDAY 25th. Lieut Atkinson left early this morning for KIVORI and the coastal areas to obtain more labourers. At 9 o'clock, I left Waima for Kairuku and continued along the beach back to PINUAPAKA village, and crossed to Kairuku by Canoe arriving there at 5 o'clock. Reported to District Officer on arrival that Lieut Atkinson had begun his return journey to Bulldog, and that the patrol generally had been successful.

Lieut *L. James O'Malley* ..... A.D.O  
L. James O'Malley.  
Lakekamu District.

*Miller*  
*6/11*

3-1-6.

COMMONWEALTH OF AUSTRALIA  
AUSTRALIAN MILITARY FORCES.

DISTRICT HEADQUARTERS  
KAIKUKU  
23.10. '42.

N.G. 2206 Cpl. Swanson P.M.

The strongest exception is taken to your remarks in the MAFULU V.C.'s Register, which read:-

" V.C. KAVI seems to me quite helpful, although he cannot obtain carriers, and gets no backing from officers passing through here. Was held up here for the lack of carriers for the first time in 15 years, put the trouble down to the above cause."

V.C. Registers were not meant for criticism of District Officers by N.C.O's ignorant of local conditions, who happen to be passing through.

The D.D.S. to whom the matter was referred in my Patrol Report directed me "to suitably instruct you in this matter" if I had not already done so.

W.H.H.?  
DISTRICT OFFICER

Capt.,

Copy to D.D.S. referring to his 438 of 16 inst.

The D.D.S.  
A.N.G.A.U.

For your information please.

D.D.S.

*[Handwritten signature]*

29.10

File: *[Handwritten signature]*  
30/10/42

W.H.H. Thompson

D.O.

23 x 42



50/198

AUSTRALIAN MILITARY FORCES.

Adm HQ  
ANG  
16 OCT 42.

D.O.  
KATRUGU

PATROL REPORT - ONONGE.

I agree with the remarks contained in your diary entry of 24/9 in reference to unauthorised persons making entries in V.C.'s Register. If you are in touch with him, you will suitably instruct Cpl Swanson, R.M. if you have not already done so.

A police training depot is in operation in Port Moresby. Further advice in this connection will be forwarded in and at an early date.

(signed) .ELLIOTT SMITH...

Major.  
D.O.S.

GENERAL REPORT.

Throughout the whole of the patrol, I found that the morale of the natives was good, and in all districts the people were going about their daily work as usual, and apparently the war scare that existed amongst some districts has apparently been forgotten and village life etc goes on as it has in the past.

COMPLAINTS. In some villages there were a few complaints, but these were not serious and all were settled out of court.

RICE. The rice areas appear to be exceedingly good at the present time and should yield a good crop, which the people expect to harvest in June. Most of the rice areas are at present under water but this will do the crop a lot of good and not damage it.

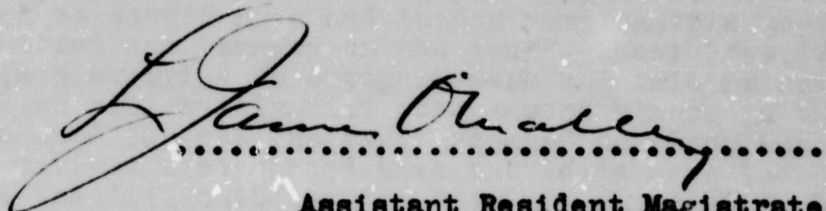
ROADS. Roads were fair in all the districts, but in a few places the roads are under water owing to the heavy rains in the mountain districts, the flooding and overflowing of the St Joseph River.

VILLAGES. All the villages visited were clean and tidy, with the exception of BEREINA village, and this was cleaned up while I was at the village.

GARDENS . Many new gardens seen in all the districts and these appear to be doing well.

REST HOUSES. All rest houses in good condition.

L.H. There does not appear to be any sickness in the the villages visited.



Assistant Resident Magistrate.

Kairuku. 10/4/42.



3-1-6

B.U. 21/11

District Office,  
Kairuku,  
Lakekamu District,  
30/10/42.

District Officer,  
Kairuku,

MEKEO PATROL

Sir,

Please find attached, in duplicate, a report on my recent patrol to the Mekeo and Waima areas for the purpose of general inspection, arrest of deserters from Bulldog area, and recruiting of more labour for the L of C Lakekamu River. The patrol, I think, has been successful and 90 deserters were apprehended and 205 new labourers were signed on for the L of C at Terapo. At Waima I met Lieut Atkinson and handed over to him, and on receipt of instructions from you, I returned to Kairuku arriving there on the 18th.

Throughout the whole district, I found everything going well and there was no trouble up that way. The villages were fairly clean and tidy and the rest houses were in good order. There were no complaints made by the natives.

There has been very little rain in the Mekeo for some time, but a day or so before I left, rain began to fall, and as the gardens were very dry, the rain now will improve them. I expect to see a large supply of fresh vegetables from that area, and suggest that we make arrangements with village police in the various villages to bring fresh food here to the station.

Owing to the number of desertions and the number of deserters arriving back in their villages while I was up there, I made inquiries re the cause of these mass desertions, and can assure you that these mass desertions have nothing to do whatsoever with war fear. The Mekeo natives are well aware that this fight against the Japanese is theirs as well as ours, and I explained to them that it was necessary to keep supplies up to the troops, as by their desertions from the lines they were causing a delay which might become serious. I had a good talk to them and afterwards had no trouble in obtaining many more new labourers for the lines. These deserters realize that they should not have deserted, but many of them informed me that the reason they deserted was because there were not receiving proper treatment, i.e. They were not being fed properly, this does not mean that they were not receiving sufficient food, they were receiving the right quantity, but not at the right time, as one native explained to me in the following words, "we get up in the morning, and the cooks line up to get our food, but by the time he has collected it, we have already moved off from the camp and have to carry all day without anything to eat. On our return we get the food that we should have had in the morning, this goes on every day and we are very tired and hungry on the road". These boys, if this statement is correct, are carrying on empty stomach and this is not good, and if this continues we will surely find more want places in the labour lines, carrying is a hard job and the carriers must be given regular meals, if possible. Other natives also stated that the loads were too heavy, if this is so, and owing to the difficult country they are supposed to be carrying over, I think it is a big mistake to over-load them, especially as these men are coastal natives and are now working in a mountain area. The average weight for a coastal boy in mountain country should not be more than 45 lbs. The natives also tell me that they are not given any rest between trips and that they are going seven days in the week, could they not at least be given one day's rest in seven, I know that it is most urgent that the stores go through, but what I am thinking of, if the statements are true, how many boys are going to crack up, and crack up they will as these men cannot stand up to continual carrying. I am not pro native, neither am I anti native, but if all I have heard from the natives on my last trip is true, then I am of the opinion that they are not getting a fair go. I would

D.S.

2/11

*Interviewed for the C. & S. conditions Kokoda. Did they say anything L/C?*

like to point out however that I do not know what the conditions at Bulldog or any other place is like, and in writing this letter I am only going by what the natives tell me, and what they say may be quite wrong.

You have already two statements taken by me in regard to a certain person who's name is unknown, re the desertion of certain natives from Rarai Village, and if this is correct, then it must be stopped, otherwise we will have more of these desertions. These natives are easily led especially if it is by a European, and I feel sure that if any European tells the natives to desert, as stated in the statements, I am sure that the native will do so.

I have instructed the natives that if they have any more complaints they are to go to Lieut Norris at Terapo or to Lieut Atkinson at Bulldog and lay their complaints before them instead of coming back to their villages. I made them understand that this was a serious business and that these desertions must stop. I have very little faith in native promises, but these people have promised not to desert again.

A number of the WAIMA people are still in the bush, they also include some of the deserters from Kokoda. I could not at the time apprehend these people, but this will be done later on. They are a lot of slackers and from my experience with them, I am afraid that as they will not come in to carry, they will have to be forced into labour, all they are concerned with is their pigs-land and women, and are avoiding the carrying. It is their duty to carry, as well as the other tribes, and they must be pressed into service if they will not volunteer for the carrying and sent to either Bulldog or Kokoda.

Before leaving WAIMA a number of carriers came in from KIVORI, and amongst them were some men who had deserted from Kokoda. I brought these men back to Kairuku with me.

*Lt Show Ball McKenna.*

*then pass to D.D.S.  
to discuss with Capt*

*Baldwin re L/C.*

*- Bulldog L/C being  
withdrawn except for  
skeleton staff.*

*Adm. Hqrs.  
A.N.G.*

Lieut. *L. James O'Malley* ..... A.D.O.

*L. James O'Malley.  
Lakekamu District.*

*C.S.O.  
L. James*

In forwarding this report I am in entire agreement with Lt O'Malley's remarks re the state of affairs as regards carriers on the LAKEKAMU Lines of Communication. These Desertions would NOT be so numerous without some good reason and the whole position there requires investigation in my opinion.

*W.H.H. Jansen  
D.O.*

*30.10.42*

*D.D.S*

*Show Hamer*

*2/11*

*B/O 2/11*

*to discuss with  
Lieut Norris*

*6/11*

*With  
6/11*

*B/O 1/2 2/11*



DS.

301 319

1942/3

P/R No.

STATION :- KAIRUKU

DISTRICT :- LAKEKAMU

AREA PATROLLED :- MEREO DISTRICT

PATROL OFFICER :- LT. L.J. O'MALLEY

DATE :- 13/19 NOVEMBER 1942.

REPORT OF PATROL MADE BY L. JAMES O'MALLEY,  
TO THE MEKEO DISTRICT FOR THE PURPOSE OF  
GENERAL INSPECTION.

000.

W.H.H. 1  
D.O.  
24.1.42

NOVEMBER, 1942.

FRIDAY 13th.

With Captain Willis, I got away from Kairuku at 10.30 a.m. and was conveyed to BIOTO village per "GAWA", arriving at the village at 1 p.m. Village clean and tidy. The large swamps around this village are now overflowing owing to the heavy rains in the mountain area. Remained in the village until 4.30 p.m. Rain commenced to fall. Capt Willis and myself proceeded to INAWAIA per motor lorry, arriving there at 5.30 p.m. After unloading cargo at rest house, continued on to the rice mill at Jesubaibua, and remained there until 7 p.m. Rain still falling, and many places on the road covered with water overflowing from the swamps.

INAWAIA village was clean and tidy, and the rest house is in good condition.

SATURDAY 14th.

Returned to the rice mill early this morning. W/O Williams tried out the machine, but owing to worn out parts of the machinery, the milling was not entirely successful. We remained at the mill until noon, and then returned to INAWAIA. Capt Willis then went on to BIOTC and to Kairuku.

Heavy rain falling all the afternoon.

SUNDAY 15th.

Many village constables in from various villages, and all report that the upper Mekeo is under water owing to the heavy rains, some in fact had to use small canoes in many places on the road. V.C's made reports on rice areas. Instructed V.C's of INAWAIA, EBOA, JESUBAIBUA, INAUAWI and INAUABUI to bring in all their people as I would pay them for the rice.

MONDAY 16th.

Mail from Kairuku during the night. People in to get payment for rice. No complaints around this district by the people. During the afternoon visited the rice mill again. Preparations being made to install a small huller, and W/O Williams expects to put through rice at the end of next week.

TUESDAY 17th.

People from various villages came into camp and brought large quantities of fresh vegetables, bananas, taro, sweet-potatoes and pineapples, these were purchased for Kairuku. During the early morning, I visited a number of new rice areas, and these are large and if good weather continues a large crop of rice from this area will be obtained. During the afternoon, had people clear the area around the rest house, and half an acre of rice was planted.

Heavy rain again to day. Roads flooded.

WEDNESDAY 18th.

Made payments to various people for their rice. Heavy rains again all day.

THURSDAY 19th.

Early morning visited the rice mill again. W/O Williams turned the machinery over and it appears to be going well. At noon returned to the rest house and packed up gear and proceeded to BIOTO village. Heavy rains. Water now running over the BIOTO bridge. Obtained canoes at BIOTO and returned to Kairuku, arriving here at 10.30 p.m.

Lieut. *L. James O'Malley* ..... A.D.O.



GENERAL REPORT ON THE PATROL.

-----

The patrol to the Mekeo was only a short one, but during the period of seven days, most of the lower Mekeo was gone over. Much difficulty was experienced owing to the heavy rains and flood waters. The area around INAUABUI is practically under water, and these people have not been to their gardens for two days as it is impossible to cross the swamps to them. The INAWAIA people also have been cut off from their large gardens, but before I left the district, they were able to get to some of their gardens. From what I saw of the gardens in the district, the people this year have certainly a plentiful supply of vegetables, consisting of taro, sugar cane, sweet potatoes, tomatoes and pineapples. Corn is now being planted in many of the areas.

Owing to the heavy rains, the roads are not in a very good state, the flood waters from the large swamps have overflowed and are flooding the roads. The water near the BIOTC bridge has risen between 15 and twenty feet, and is running over the top of the bridge.

During my stay, I saw and interviewed all the village police from the district and from their reports everything is alright in the district. The people are all engaged on gardens and repair work to houses in the villages.

RICE CULTIVATION.

It will be noted that for the past few months, the Mekeo district has practically been drained of the young men for work on the Iakekamu Line of Communication, and also for other work outside their district, and it was thought that owing to this the rice cultivation this year would not be as successful as previous years, but from the information I received, and from what I saw myself, I feel assured that providing we have a good weather season, we will this year have a far better crop than we had before. This work is being carried on by the old men of the villages and the women and children. The old men cut the large trees down, while the women and children do all the clearing and burning, and these people are to be congratulated for the work they have done. The people are fully aware that this rice cultivation is necessary to help the war effort, and these old men and the women are certainly doing their bit to help on that effort, it is hard work for them, but they are carrying on just as their sons are in other parts of the Territory, and their one idea is, that this year their crops will exceed those of the previous years, they themselves are pleased with the work they have done, and many of them said to me, "wait till you see all the rice we will give to the Government this season", it will be much more than has ever been grown before". These people have been asked to grow as much rice as they can, and I feel assured they they will not fail us.

STORES (Trade).

D.R.S  
?  
On my recent visit the Mekeo people asked if stores were to be opened in our district, but I could not give them an answer, but informed them that I would make inquiries for them. If possible, I suggest that this matter be taken up, as the people of this district are in need of trade, especially long knives, blankets, mosquito nets and various other articles. There is a large amount of money in the district and by opening stores we will not only be pleasing the native, but we would probably be able to obtain all the money, which is now not in circulation, in the district.

Lieut. *L. James O'Malley* A.D.O.  
L. James O'Malley.  
24/11/42.

3-1-6

COMMONWEALTH OF AUSTRALIA  
AUSTRALIAN MILITARY FORCES.

District Headquarters

Kairuku. 24.II.42

No. I92/ I6/42

Admn. Hqrs.

A.N.G. Port Moresby

PATROL REPORT.

Reference to attached Patrol Report by Lt. L.J.O'Malley, his remarks under "General Notes on Page 2" on the MEKEO rice culture are, I think, very encouraging. All the able bodied men at work in Port Moresby or on the LAKEKAMU L/C, the remainder including women and children hard at work on their rice plots for next year's crop, a 100% war effort indeed.

Mr Williams tells me that the mill will be in running order very shortly.

The natives are I know very enthusiastic over the price the Army pays for their paddy, 1d per lb. We will complete the payments for last year's crop as soon as we get some more cash.

W.H.H. Thompson

D.O.  
(W.H.H. THOMPSON)

D.D.S.

26/4



AUSTRALIAN MILITARY FORCES.

3-1-6

Adm HQ  
ANG  
4 DEC 48.

1260

D.O.  
KAIRUKU.

Your 192/16/48 of 24/11/48 (Patrol Report by  
Lieut. L.J. O'Malley.

Saturday 14th.

Has any action been taken to obtain new parts  
for this rice mill?

It is very pleasing to know that the natives  
in this area are so well off for native foods, and that  
there is every prospect of a good rice crop.

  
M.A.S.  
D.O.S.

P.A.S.12.

DS.

301 3/12

1942/3

P/R No.

STATION:- KAIRUKU

DISTRICT:- LAKEKAMU

AREA PATROLLED:- MEKEO, KUNIMAIPA and

KARUAMA AREAS.

PATROL OFFICER:- LT. R.G. ORMSBY

DATE:- 2 Nov / 8 Dec. 1942.



Australian New Guinea

No 27 of 1942

District H.Q.,  
Kairuku.  
December 10th. 1942

The District Officer,  
Kairuku.

Report of patrol to Mekeo, Kynimaipa and Karuama areas.

Personnel:- Lieut. Ormsby A.D.O., L/Cpl. Safi and eight members of the R.P.C.

- Objects:-
- (1) Ensuring that adequate areas for rice planting were being cleared in the Mekeo area.
  - (2) Investigation of alleged murders in the Kynimaipa and Karuama valleys.
  - (3) General administrative work.

Duration:- From November 2nd. 1942 to December 8th. 1942 - a total of 37 days.

Patrol Diary.

- November 2. Left Kairuku at 9.15 a.m. per Gawa. Only able to proceed a short distance on account of low tides so continued to Bioto by whaleboat. Runner despatched requesting lorry. Quantity of native food purchased and despatched to Kairuku.
- 3 Lorry arrived very early and patrol left for Inawaia. Visited W.O. Williams for discussion re rice crop. Inawai-a people put to work. Visited Catholic Mission.
  - 4 To Jesubaibua and rice-mill; people put to work. Obtained list of anticipated areas from W.O. Williams. Inawabui village reported working well. W.O. Bonner and party visited patrol. Unable to obtain a full line of Efoa village. W.O. Simpson arrived at rest-house during late afternoon. Carriers despatched Oriropetana with rice.
  - 5 Visited and lined Efoa village; work on rice area commenced. On to Oriropetana by lorry. Village in disgusting condition work of cleaning up commenced under police supervision. Crossed ~~river~~ river and proceeded Baipa; two deserters apprehended. Visited Catholic Mission.
  - 6 Lined Baipa village prior to despatching them to work/ visited Oriropetana and lined natives. C.N.A. held - one native sentenced one month IHL. On A.C. left to supervise work here and proceeded to the Aipeana rice area. Work here was progressing well carriers being used to assist in the heavy work.
  - 7 Visited Inawi village and rice areas; although V.C. was absent excellent work had been done and was continuing. Carriers despatched Inawauni with rice. During afternoon police and rations arrived from Kairuku. Visited Baipa areas to inspect progress.
  - 8 Sunday observed for village labour. Purchased a quantity of native foods for despatch Kairuku by returning Bioto carriers. Also deserters and prisoners under escort of Aipeana V.C. / Lunched at R.C. Mission; spent afternoon with father Louis van Campenhau discussing Kynimaipa and Karuama valleys.
  - (9) Visited Amoamo and Rarai villages and rice areas before continuing on to Inawauni. Police sent to inspect Bebeo across the St. Joseph. Work only just commenced but progressing. Heavy rain all afternoon.
- 10-12 Writer suffering from semi-gastric fever. Police and carrier cleaning rice areas.

(2)

- November 13 Got a very early start and taking things very slowly reached Imounga about midday. Village and rest-house in a shocking condition. Despite use of a fly it was impossible to find a dry spot in the rest-house large enough for hammock. Village lined during afternoon and C.N.A. held.
- 14 Left early for Maipa. Passed through I-oi and reached Maipa at 11 a.m. Very heavy rain set in.
- 15 Selected carriers for patrol. Police given rifle practise.
- 16 Got away from Maipa shortly before 7 and proceeded upstream. A new road has been cut which does away with the crossing of the Akaifu below Dia. Here crossed with some little difficulty and camped at a mountain settlement named Gi 45 minutes walk further on. Heavy rain set in as we arrived and shelters were constructed under very uncomfortable conditions.
- 17 Got an early start along a good road; passed turn off to a small village where V.C. Ginamua is living and continued until losing the track in some large gardens. Ginamua arrived and explained that the road was now on the other bank; he led us by a log bridge to the other bank and after half an hours scrambling came on a good road which we followed to Owiza village - a new settlement. Heavy rain before the village was reached at 11.30.
- 18 Breaking camp at 6.30 we crossed the Akaifu and a large tributary after an hour and a half's walk and continued passed the abandoned hamlet of Omeri and made camp at the foot of the ascent to the divide. The usual rain had set in. Some difficulty en route in crossing the semi-flooded rivers.
- 19 Rain delayed start but as it showed no sign of abating we set out at 8 a.m. and arrived at the Girebi camp site shortly after noon. After a couple of hours contacted a few people from Abu hamlet who confirmed that the Girebi people had run away to the Guriza area lower down the Kunimaipa for fear of consequences for the murder of Bauwei. Murderers alleged to be Kutoi of Girebi and Wauwai of Ivirupu. Word sent to the Girebi people that Kutoi must be brought in.
- 20 Late in the morning some Girebi people arrived bringing Kutoi with them. Enquiries made and Kutoi arrested. Girebi people told to return to their villages. Messages sent to the Guriza and Komu people. V.C. Lelewai of Kuefa reported.
- 21 At Girebi. Simani of Zoinatu and V.C. Zopa of Tonamena reported and advised that the Ivirupu people were unable to cross the Kunimaipa. Sun came out for the first time for some days so attempted to get gear etc. dry.
- 22 Left at 7 a.m. for Zoinatu. Road fair only and in places very steep. A little over five hours brought us to Zoinatu where V.C. Golupui was waiting to meet us. He advises that the wanted man Wauwai was living in the Ivirupu area with a colony of Guriza people known as the Melamis but that he has not enough control over them to bring them in. A messenger was sent with a leaf token marking a time limit and it was explained that if Wauwai did not come in any one sheltering him would be regarded as an accessory. Today is the first day without rain since leaving Kairuku and there are many colds among the police and carriers.
- 23 Some heavy rain early but fined quickly. Sent down to the river to select a bridge site. About noon there was a commotion and I discovered that Wauwai and the wife of the murdered man were approaching the camp. He came within a few hundred yards of the camp but seeing a large number of natives became frightened and ran away. The woman came in quite calmly. Sent Golupui to call to him and after about an hour he came into the camp. He freely admitted the murder and seemed quite resigned to his arrest.
- 24 Got away from Z



- November 24 Got away from Zoinatu at 7.30 a.m. and reached Tonamena in a little over 4 hours walking. Called out for chief and V.C. Manai of Reum Lamena. Selected a rest-house site and put carriers to work clearing it. Manai and a number of natives came in during the afternoon.
- 25 -29 Thesedays were spent at Tonamena. Short trips to nearby hamlets were made and a large number of natives visited us regularly. Enquiries re various alleged killings and murders were made and a number of matters settled by arbitration without resort to legal process. A rest-house and barracks were built and other villages told to copy them. A meeting of all available V.C.'s was held and administration policy explained. Special instructions were given re the possibility of crashed planes. An attempt was made to record what village and tribe names I could obtain so that subsequent patrols can check on their accuracy.
- 30 Left Tonamena at 6.30 and crossed a high divide to reach Ko Korovizo at 1 p.m. The usual heavy rain set in at midday.
- December 1 From Korovizo to Olifi about 2 hrs. over a good track. This is the village of V.C. Aupoi who had reported to us at Tonamena and the centre of a fairly good population. Everything was in order and no crime reported.
- 2 From Olifi to Botugau a well known camping ground. V.C.s Noma of Koruraravau and Anuma of Karuama reported all well in their respective areas. An alleged fight among these people was investigated and discovered to be very trivial.
- 3 V.C. Noma supplied a native said to be friendly with the Iguei people and he was despatched with a message for them to contact me at Natala or Foilamareo. Left for Natala crossing the Tapala on a good bridge and in a little over 4 hours walking made camp. Contacted some Putsiriva people and commenced investigations into the death of two Foilamareo natives. It is alleged that the Iguei people committed the offence but there is no evidence other than rumour and the names of the alleged murderers vary from day to day. Arranged for the widow of the victim to come to Lavidō Ko tomorrow as it is now rumoured that she saw the murderers.
- 4 Left Natala and found that the bridge over the Meipa had been washed away. Got across with some difficulty and continued over a good road to Lavidō Ko. Very heavy rain. The widow of the victim was waiting for us - easily recognisable as she was wearing the deceased as a necklace. She herself states that she does not know anything about who did the murder other than that she found the bodies. The more I hear of this case with alleged claims against the Iguei the more I suspect something faked about it. The messenger arrived and stated that he and another native had been fired on by the Iguei people as soon as he got near to the village and that he had run away without delivering the message. Both natives were then questioned separately and their story varied on so many essential points that I cannot make up my mind. They were taken into custody for the night. Unfortunately I have only another days rice and native food is practically unobtainable so that I cannot visit them. Also as the victims are both reputed sorcerers and the people seem too eager to blame the Iguei tribe for everything on alleged evidence which so far has been denied by the people quoted as their source of information that I am reluctant to act too hurriedly. Decided to release the two messengers but Lauwei escaped only a minute or two before he was to be released. V.C. Noma to endeavour to apprehend.
- 6 Left Lavidō Ko and camped at the Ufafa River.
- 7 From the Ufafa River to Beipa.
- 8 From Beipa to Jesubaibua picking up the Gawa and reaching Mairuku shortly before 10 p.m.

Native Situation.

The area patrolled included the extremely sophisticated Mekeo natives and gradually changed until the only semi-controlled natives of the Kunimaipa valley were encountered. Although not fully controlled many of the mountain peoples have V.C.'s and the good work done by earlier patrols is certainly bearing fruit.

The patrol went up the Kunimaipa valley as far as Tonamena and also contacted the Raumenamena and Zailabu peoples farther up the valley. Ganiawai just across the Zevi-Gotize river from Zailabu has a V.C. but the patrol was unable to contact him. It would appear that this is the limit of any substantial government influence although of course the people higher up have been frequently contacted in the past and are well aware of the existence and nature of the government. All the Tapala and Karuama villages are under considerable government influence although it would seem that the Maipa River people have not had the same contact with patrols.

All of these mountain peoples impressed me as being at a more or less critical stage in their development. ~~xxx~~ The ground work done by previous patrols has planted excellent seed and the time has come for the harvest to be reaped. Unless regular and fairly frequent visits are made to these areas I fear that there will be a general slipping back. As commented on by previous patrols it is extremely difficult to get the mountain V.C.'s to visit Kairuku at all regularly (some did come in with the patrol but only those who had been here before) for fear of sorcery by the coastal natives and also because of the distance. It had been hoped that a number of them would report regularly to Gailala and for a while they did so but it now appears obvious that when Mr. O'Malley who they knew well left Gailala their interest in reporting there ceased. They did not respond to a suggestion that they recommenced their visits.

The advantages of and need for a police post in this area have been stressed so often in the past that there is little need for us to reiterate them. However it is my definite opinion that this valley will never be completely controlled until this is done for a period. Failing this I suggest as frequent visits as possible and an attempt to connect up with the T.N.G. natives not very far distant. There is already a native contact which is proved by the fact that even the lower Kunimaipas know such pidgin words as 'kiap', 'lukuai', 'tultul', 'dokta' etc., indicating that the people they are in contact with are at least semi-controlled. This linking-up should also be of use in other ways under war conditions. I estimate that Garaina could be reached in a week from Tonamena.

In the Kunimaipa valley we have unfortunately had to work without two great aids to the extension of control. Firstly the altitude of the villages and consequent susceptibility of the natives to fever debar the people from working on the coast and consequently there are no time finished labourers to assist us. Also there is no permanent mission settlement in the area and another source of education is missing. This means that village policemen have to be chosen from the raw natives or those with a little prison experience. As a result, although most of the V.C.'s are exceptionally influential men and very eager to assist they have been able to grasp little more than that the administration forbids fighting and murders.

An interesting feature of the mountain peoples was their tribal divisions. I think that with the coming of peace some of them are gradually merging but there still appear to be a surprising number of sharply marked tribes each with a number of hamlets. There is no doubt of the importance of the chiefs; Golupui of Ivirupu is outstanding but Manai of Raumenamena, Inawai of Givona and Simani of the Gelevi-Goipa people are very influential men. An interesting illustration is their common habit of attributing all killings where the name of the actual murderer is unknown to the chief of the tribe suspected.

A number of killings were investigated by the patrol - it is pleasing to note that most of them were murders and not tribal fighting. Two men were arrested and brought to Kairuku to be charged with the murder of a Girebi man. The killing of a



Native Situation (continued.)

Raumenamena youth by natives unknown was adjusted by the payment of compensation. The footprints of the murderers led to Tonamena territory and, although these natives denied complicity, they agreed to pay compensation.

An old murder of an Ivirupu man by Givena people which had been reported to Kairuki in 1941 and previously incorrectly attributed to chief Inawai was investigated and Inawai's innocence established. There is no serious desire by Golupui to press the charge and it is hoped that this matter will be settled happily by the payment of a pig. The rumoured killing of Givena people by Tonamenas appears unfounded; chief Inawai of Givena denies all knowledge of it. Fighting has been reported between the Givena and Omu tribes but I could not obtain any accurate details. The Komu people are said to have killed a Givena man, but I judge this to be an old matter. The Givena people are still very timid - so far as I can ascertain the contact established with Inawai is the first since 1939 - and these matters were allowed to wait. Inawai has promised to use his influence to restrain fighting and he is worth considering as a future V.C.

The Raumenamena and Zailabu people were very friendly and Manai's appointment as V.C. appears a great success. They say there has been no friction between them and the tribes higher up the valley but I cannot say if this is correct. I could not establish contact with the V.C. of Ganiawai and this might have been due to some unreported trouble.

In the Tapala Karuama valleys the only outstanding matter is the unsolved killing of two Foilamareo natives. This is universally attributed to the Iguei tribe but the names of the alleged murderers vary considerably. It was rather surprising to find that the closer I got to the Foilamareo people the less definite they were about the murderers. In the beginning I was informed that there were definite witnesses to the murder but as I contacted the alleged witnesses they passed me on to someone else. It appears that the two deceased - father and son - were reputed sorcerers and as the accounts I received varied considerably with different interpreters I think it possible that the murderers may come from nearer home and the Iguei story be a blind. Unfortunately I did not have sufficient rice to visit the Iguei and Oina people so the matter had to be left in the air temporarily. V.C. Moinei of the Oina people is now living in the Ufafa valley and although sent for did not contact the patrol.

The remainder of the Karuama and Tapala people appear in a fit condition for a little more intensive administration work. Much could be done in the way of improving roads and the construction of a few rest-houses but the V.C.'s have not got the necessary drive or ability to do the work without some assistance and supervision. Father Louis has demonstrated what can be done with a little guidance.

Roads and tracks.

The route up the Akaifu River to Girebi provides a surprisingly easy crossing of the coastal divide. Father Louis has constructed a bridle path as far as Dia and it should not be difficult to extend it a lot further. The population of the Akaifu has increased considerably during recent years, and labour is now available to do the work.

From Girebi up the Kunimaipa there are only native tracks but except in a few places they are not particularly difficult. One or two precipitous descents however are quite dangerous. From Tonamena there is a fair track across an 8000 foot divide to Kooopizo and from there down the Tapala the road is a mixture of good and bad. There are no big climbs but there are numerous little stretches around mountain sides where great care is necessary. A little work with pick and mattock would do wonders. At Lavido Ko a good road starts and after a few hours becomes a bridle track which runs all the way to Inawauni.

The patrol was fortunate in striking the rivers mostly in the early morning when the evening floods had somewhat abated; also the bush Mekecs taken as carriers are excellent river boys. Most of the rivers could be permanently bridged by cane suspension bridges.

Rest Houses

After leaving Maipa no rest-houses were encountered until the patrol returned to the Mekeo. In some places the villagers made empty houses available for the carriers, but as the patrol only had one tent and fly, it was usually necessary to construct shelters. For this reason it was advisable to always pitch camp before noon, but even so heavy rain frequently set in beforehand. Old houses were noticed at Girevi and Botugau but they were unusable.

A rest-house and barracks were constructed at Tonamena and V.C.'s of other villages asked to copy them.

Health

The health of the part generally was quite fair despite very bad weather for a large part of the patrol. The writer had a sharp attack of fever at Inawauni but soon recovered and was in excellent health for the remainder of the patrol.

Despite the damp conditions and inadequate protection from the weather the police and carriers stood up to it very well. Colds were common but no serious chest complaints. There was a minor crop of boils and sores among the carriers and one was wounded in the head by a falling tree causing minor concussion and necessitating some stitches. Otherwise everybody stood up to the conditions very well.

Some bad ulcers were noticed in the mountain and requests for treatment were surprisingly frequent. I strongly recommend that the next patrol takes a medical boy with an adequate supply of drugs. Successful cures would do much to assist in spreading administration influence.

Food Supplies.

From Maipa to Girebi very little native food was obtainable though as the gardens of the migrants improve this may be remedied. Very little was obtainable at Girebi due to the absence of the natives but from there on it was very plentiful. A small quantity of European vegetables was obtainable at Tonamena. I am arranging for those V.C.'s now at Kairuku to take what seeds can be obtained back with them. The soil is certainly fertile.

At the top of the Tapala supplies were plentiful but from there down the position deteriorated and at Natala and Lavido Ko only a very small quantity could be obtained - the gardens seen were very poor compared to the upper river.

Mekeo rice plots

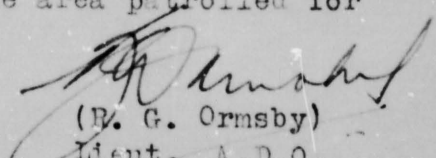
The Mekeo natives impressed me as the most self-centred people I have ever encountered. Compared to the open natured hospitable mountain people they are a most unlovable lot. They appear to take no interest in anyone but themselves and a government patrol is regarded as a regrettable incident.

Only two or three villages had commenced to clear their rice areas prior to my arrival and everybody used the absence of a number of labourers as an excuse for saying that they couldn't possibly clear anything but a very small area. Nevertheless once put to work under supervision they seemed to develop an interest and the areas seen on the way back indicate that much good work has been done. They persist in clearing virgin scrub each year and with a number of men away the heavy work of tree-felling is somewhat of a burden on those left. Where possible the patrols carriers were used to assist villagers in this.

It seems a great pity that the once cleared areas are not persevered with; I take it the reason is a desire to avoid weeding but with only women and children left in the villages weeding should be easier than the clearing of new bush. I understand that a rice-corn rice-corn rotation is very effective and corn would certainly be a useful crop.

Mission activities

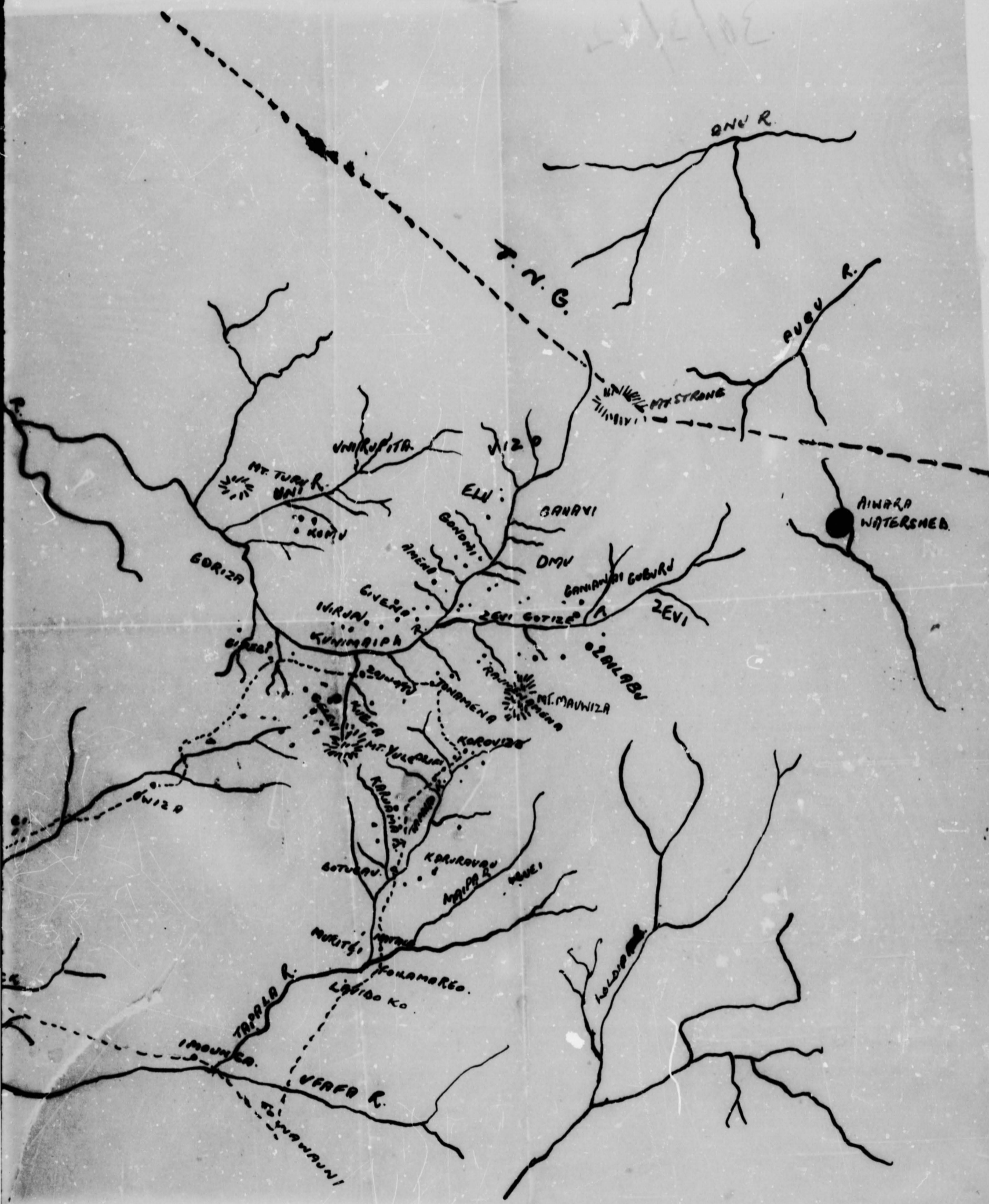
No report of this patrol would be complete without a grateful recognition of the assistance and hospitality shown to me everywhere by the Roman Catholic Mission. Such co-operation with the administration comes as a pleasant surprise to one not accustomed to such an attitude. In particular I am very grateful to Father van Campenhaut who possesses an extensive knowledge of the area patrolled for information and assistance given.

  
(R. G. Ormsby)  
Lieut. A.D.O.





2/2/02





AUSTRALIAN MILITARY FORCES. 3-1-6

1696 A

Adm HQ  
AWG  
6 JAN 43.

D.O.  
KAIRUKU.

PATROL REPORT NO. 27 OF 1942.  
YOUR 251 OF 17/12/42.

The above report is a most interesting and informative one. Lieut. Ormsby should be congratulated on the patrol which was a most arduous one.

(1) G3(I) *from dtd 5.7.43.*

(2) Ra.

*can  
6/11*

*give*

Major.  
A.A.G. (Disa.)

No 251

DISTRICT HEADQUARTERS  
KAIRUKU  
17 Dec 42

3-1-6

D.D.S.  
Hqrs Adm  
ANG.

LIEUT. ORMSBY'S PATROL TO MT. YULE DISTRICT.

Herewith Patrol Report No. 27 of 1942 of 10 inst. by the above officer.

Owing to lack of staff the people in the KUNIMAIPA and MARUAMA River areas have not been visited by a patrol for over one year. Lieut. Ormsby managed to contact them with excellent results and the patrol was a very successful one.

He brought back to the station one very interesting personality, one GOLOPUI the chief of the IVIRUPU tribe, just south-east of Mt. YULE on the KUNIMAIPA River. This man is a real chief, a very rare occurrence in PAPUA. His word is law in his own tribe and he has been a great asset on the side of law and order. Sir Hubert Murray once took him for a tour of the coast of the Territory in the "LAURABADA" after he had been brought to this station on a charge of murder, and he has never forgotten the impressions formed on that trip.

I am glad to see that Mr. Ormsby acknowledged in the last paragraph of his report the help and kindness of the Catholic Mission on this patrol. This Mission now, as in the past, always co-operates with the Government.

Both in the MEKEO and in the mountains much good work was done by this officer, and the report itself makes interesting reading.

A case of wilful murder brought down has been dealt with in the District Court this day.

A "follow-up" patrol will be carried out by this officer early next month, so it is hoped.

W.H.H. Thompson  
MAJOR  
D.O.

AAQ(D)  
23/12  
aaq(d)  
27/12

W.H.H. Thompson.

O.S.O.

23/12

most interesting and informative.  
Lt Ormsby should be congratulated. This AD's  
is an arduous patrol. aaq(d) 27/12

22/12



DS.

301 3 111

1942/3

P/R No.

STATION :- KAIRUA

DISTRICT :- LAKEBA

AREA PATROLLED :- MAKIAO DISTRICT

PATROL OFFICER :- LT. L.J. O'MALLEY

DATE :- 2/4 DECEMBER 1942..

W.H.H. J  
D.C.  
7/12/42

REPORT OF PATROL MADE BY L. James O'Malley,  
TO THE MEKEO FOR THE PURPOSE OF PAYING  
RICE GROWERS AND FOR GENERAL INSPECTION.

oOo.

December.

WEDNESDAY 2nd.

Left Kairuku at 8.a.m per Mission launch for Aropikina arriving there at 1.p.m.

Slight rain falling as we left Aropikina in motor lorry for Mekeo. About ten minutes away from Aropikina, lorry stuck in the bog on the road and it took twenty minutes to get it out again. The road from there on is in good condition. Arriving at Inauabui village, village constable reported. Inspected village and rest house and found them clean and tidy.

Proceeded to INAWAIA, and later to the rice mill, (see general report). Made camp at Inawaia. Inspected village, and found it clean and tidy.

THURSDAY 3rd.

Got away early morning from Inawaia, and called in at the rice mill. Left again and proceeded to ORIROPETANA village. Some parts of the road awful. Instructed the village constable, after inspecting his village, to tell all the people to go to BEIPA rest house where I would make payments for the rice.

Crossed the St Joseph, which is in flood, but has gone down considerably since last week. The road from the river to the rest house is fair.

Heavy rain fell during the afternoon, but at three oclock it cleared up, and as all the people had come in from the various villages I commenced to pay them for the rice. Villages in this area clean and tidy.

FRIDAY 4th.

Returned to the rice mill at noon, and inspected the mill etc (see general report)

Left mill at four oclock, and returned to BIOTO and was conveyed to Kairuku by canoe, arriving there at 10.30 p.m.

Lieut. *L. James O'Malley*.....  
L. James O'Malley.  
A.D.O.  
Lakelamu District



GENERAL REPORT.

VILLAGES. All the villages inspected were found to be clean and tidy. A number of old houses in the various villages have been demolished and others repaired. The areas around the villages have been cleaned.

REST HOUSES. All rest houses are in good order, and the areas around them have been planted with vegetables, corn, sweet potatoes, tomatoes and bananas. The roof on the Beipa rest house has also been repaired.

GARDENS. A number of new seeds have been issued to the various village constables, and instructions given that they be planted in the gardens and well looked after. The native gardens seen in the area are doing well and the natives have a plentiful supply of the following vegetables :- taro, corn, sweet potatoes, bananas, pineapples, tomatoes, pawpaw and pumpkin.

HEALTH. The health of the natives appears to be good.

ROADS. The roads all over the district appear to be in fair condition, but lately owing to the heavy rains, some places are very muddy. About ten minutes from Aropikina near the Oroí bridge, there is a bad spot, nothing can be done at present to fix this up and repair it, owing to the soakage from the hills in the surrounding area. The bridges on the main road are good. Between BIOTO and the rice mill at Jesubaibua, the road is good, but about twenty minutes from the rice mill, there is water on the road about two feet deep for nearly twenty minutes. This was caused by the overflow of the St Joseph River about a week ago. From here on to CRIROPETIANA village, the road is good. After crossing the river, the road to BEIPA village is fair.

RICE AREAS. Throughout the whole of the district, all the natives that are left in the Mekeo are working on their village plots, and they are doing a good job. The areas are large, and as I have reported before, if we have a good weather season, we should have a good crop of rice. Some of the areas have already been burnt off and others will be burnt off during this month and the natives expect to plant sometime this month, or early in January 42.

At IMAWAIA village a few weeks ago, I planted about half an acre of rice. This was planted for the purpose of testing the soil near the village to ascertain if the soil was suitable for rice cultivation. On my visit here a few days I found that the rice had grown and was four to five inches high and so far appears to be growing well. I would like all officers who visit this patch, which is near the rest house, to give a report on the progress of this small area.

COMPLAINTS.

There were no complaints throughout the whole district, and all the village police report all well in the villages.

STORES.

Numerous inquiries were made during the patrol re the opening of stores in the district. The natives have now in their possession large sums of money, and at present have no place to spend it. The natives have asked that a store be opened as they are running short of steel-ies, knives, axes etc. Village constables and also councillors asked that if a store be opened they would like to have mosquito nets, blankets, calico, trade fish and meat, knives and axes, fish lines and hooks.

*Store already  
opened at  
Kamuker  
22.12.42*

General report cont,

RICE MILL.

On Wednesday afternoon, late, I arrived at the rice mill near Jesubaibus, and on my arrival found that W/o Williams had just ceased work for the day. He informed me that he had just completed the cleaning etc of the rice from Kanosia. I informed W/o Williams that I would return on a later date and inspect the mill. On Thursday, I again visited the mill for a few hours in the morning, and saw the machine in operation. It appears to be running well.

On Friday I again returned to the mill about noon, and with W/o Williams visited the mill. The mill commenced to operate at 1.30 p.m and within one hour had turned out approx 600 lbs of clean rice. From figures obtained from W/o Williams, the amount of rice obtained from a bag of paddy rice, after cleaning etc, is 69.48 lbs which I understand is excellent. The amount of rice cleaned etc per day will be  $3\frac{1}{2}$  tons.

The whole of the machinery at the mill is now fitted up on cement blocks, and a small portion of the floor has also been done. It would be a great improvement if the whole of the floor was done with cement, but this will have to wait until a later date.

I brought back a sample of the cleaned rice and this has been tried by members of the Kairuku staff, and all agree that it is excellent rice.

The roof of the factory has also been extended and the main roof repaired.

A large area of grass has been burnt off near the mill, and W/o Williams informs me that he going to plough this area for rice, however just at the present moment he is using the tractor to run the machinery in the factory.

I remained for four hours at the mill, and must say I was very satisfied with the work that has been done there and the work that is now going on.

Lieut. *L. James O'Malley* .....

L. James O'Malley.

A.D.O.

Kairuku,

Lakelamu District.

7/12/42.



004

DISTRICT HEADQUARTERS  
KILIRUKU YULE ISLAND.  
8 Dec 42

No 237

3-1-6

D.D.S.  
Adm Hqrs  
ANG

PATROL REPORT - Lieut. L. James O'Malley.

Herewith please find attached Patrol Report by the above officer after his visit to the MEKEO.

He stresses, quite rightly, the need for opening a Trade Store NOW. The natives has received their money for last year's rice but he has nowhere to spend it.

The Rice Mill is now working well, and the planting for next year's crop is satisfactory.

*W.H.H. Thompson*

MAJOR  
D.O.

*I.C.P.S. has this in hand.*

P.H.S

*Arrange to have small quantity of rice for inspection*

W.H.H. Thompson.

*C.S.O. 19/12  
C.S.O. 21/12  
C.S.O. 22/12  
C.S.O. 21/12*

*5/12  
PDS 15/12*

00\*

AUSTRALIAN MILITARY FORCES. 3-1-6

1549

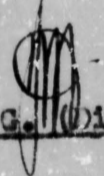
Adm HQ  
ANG  
24 DEC 42.

D.O.  
WALINGU.

PATROL REPORT - LIEUT. L.S. O'MALLEY - YOUR 237  
OF 8/12/42.

The A.S.M.C. (Capt. Loudon) has the matter of opening a trade store in hand.

Please arrange for a small quantity of rice to be sent to these HQ for inspection.

*for*  Major.  
A.A.G. (Districts).



DS.

301 3115

1942/3

P/R No.

STATION:- KAIRUKU

DISTRICT:- LAKEKAMU

AREA PATROLLED:- KAIRUKU TO TERAPO via

the MEKEO PLAIN

PATROL OFFICER:- LT. R. G. ORMSBY

DATE:- 19/30 DECEMBER 1942.

Kairuku No 1 of 43

TERAPO 1st, 1943.

The District Officer,  
KAIRUKU.

Report of a patrol from Kairuku to Terapo via the Mekeo plain.

Personnel:- Lieut. Ormsby, A.D.O., L/Cpl. Safi and four members of the R.F.C.

Objects:- (1) Apprehension of deserters.  
(2) Encouraging rice production.  
(3) General Administrative work.

Duration:- From 19th. December 1942 to 30th. December 1942 - a total of 12 days.

Patrol Diary.

Note As this unfortunately the writers diary fell overboard from a canoe and became illegible, this has been abbreviated and is written from memory.

- December 19. Left Kairuku per Gawa for Bioto. Disembarked and proceeded Inawais by lorry. Visited rice mill and discussed matters with W.O. Williams.
- 20 Lined Inawais village. Deserter apprehended.
- 21 Visited Inowabui and checked census. Returned and lined Ica and I. ....
- 22 Proceeded Beipa via Iesubuibua and Oiro Petana. Apprehension of Beipa deserters commenced.
- 23 - 27. At Beipa. Visited nearby villages and took check of censuses. Numerous deserters apprehended and court cases heard. Routine administrative work and instruction.
28. Left Beipa and proceeded by road and canoe to Bahamungo. Compiled census and warned eligible recruits. On by canoe to Aponcipi village arriving about 5 p.m.
29. ~~...~~ After compiling census continued by canoe to Biaru. A short stay here and warning to be ready for census on by 1. turn. Along the beach for a mile or two to Lefi village. Found here that nearly all these and other nearby peoples have gone to Moviavi for a feast. before.
30. Was awakened by daylight by Rev. Brown of L.M.S. Mission He was proceeding Moviavi and had called in to ask permission for these natives to attend New Year Services there. After a little thought told him that I would not commence work in the area until Saturday the 2nd. as I can use a day or two at Terapo for clerical work and discussions. Took advantage of his offer and accompanied him by whaleboat to Moviavi. Proceeded by canoe to Terapo arriving in the afternoon.
31. Visited R.C. Mission station. Clerical work etc.



### Recruiting possibilities.

A rough check of the Mekeo census revealed that 2,107 natives are absent at employment. Of these approximately 90 are employed not far from their villages at the Kubuna and Isabaibua rice areas. I estimated that in a case of vital necessity between 60 and 100 extra labourers could be obtained - perhaps half of whom would be of carrying standard. To do this however would completely denude the villages of able-bodied men; with large rice areas to maintain this would obviously be only justified in a case of extreme urgency. Nevertheless there are some men in the villages whom I consider would be better away at work. They are mainly young bachelors, who with no family husbands away at work, are likely to become a source of considerable trouble in their villages. I suggest that a gradual effort be made to send these young men to work and if possible to replace them in their villages by some of the men with large families at present away at Bulldog. It might also be possible to gradually replace men of carrying standard working on the rice plots at Isabaibua and Kubuna with family men.

Fortunately the Mekeo plain is so fertile that I do not think that any food shortage will arise from the absence of large numbers of men, though of course it is absolutely essential to keep enough men in the villages to maintain the rice production. Names of suitable recruits were noted in all villages except the first few visited.

A census was taken of the two bush Mekeo villages of Aponaipi and Babanunga from which there at present no labourers away. Able bodied men who were unmarried or married with less than two children were listed and warned to be ready if called up. If the same procedure is followed with the other bush Mekeo villages, a probable total of about 60 labourers will be obtained and there still be sufficient carriers available for mountain patrols from the men with bigger families.

I have not yet checked the census for the coastal villages but I understand from Lieut. Atkinson at Terapo that all the villages except Biaru and Losi have been more or less fully recruited. These two villages were left to supply replacements for labourers who complete six months spells at Bulldog. In this connection I would be glad of advice as to whether the six months engagement periods are still operative. I have been giving all villages to understand that work is likely to be for an indefinite period while present conditions exist. I propose when checking census to list any eligible recruits in these villages and will warn them to expect a call-up at any time.

A report was received that a member of the P.I.B. named Maha recently went to Iokea and stated that he had been sent by the Government to obtain recruits. He is alleged to have obtained 6 young boys and taken them to Kerema to be flown to Fort Moresby. I would like this checked up on as if unauthorized and successful it might develop into serious proportions.

### Deserters.

A number of deserters from the Bulldog L. of C. were arrested by the patrol and returned to employment. These included a number previously apprehended who had run away while being returned under escort to Terapo. These were charged with escaping from custody, convicted and fined two pounds each.

An attempt was made in all villages to explain that compulsory labour was a necessity at the present time, and that everyone must be prepared to fulfil administration requirements either by going to work or in food production in their villages. This explanation was greatly assisted by speeches made by Apini of Beipa a boss-boy from Bulldog just returned from a visit to Fort Moresby for propaganda purposes. I must admit that at first I was decidedly sceptical of the value of such visits, but I had Apini's story translated by a R.C. father and found that he was putting out really sound stuff.

There is no doubt that the question of stopping desertions is one that requires serious attention as the delays and extra work involved are very considerable. Two aspects must be considered; firstly the adjustment of any just complaints by the native and the ensuring that as far as possible he realises the necessity for him to work; secondly the effective punishment of any deliberate desertions without justification.

The deserters apprehended had as has almost invariably been the case, an excuse for their desertion. This time it was that their mosquito nets and blankets had been unjustly confiscated. This matter is now being investigated by Lieut. Atkinson and will be adjusted. However after very careful questioning of the deserters, it became obvious that this was not the prime reason for their desertion, but was merely being utilised as a convenient excuse. Some of the boys that deserted have admitted that they did not have gear confiscated and those that did have admitted that it was some time before the desertion. I gathered the information in a roundabout way that they had expected to be punished more or less severely and had reckoned that a week or so with their wives was well worth it. All of these natives are sufficiently sophisticated to be well aware that any reasonable complaints made by them will always be investigated and adjusted. I understand that on request counsellors and boss-boys are always allowed to visit the nearest magistrate and make any complaints they wish. In actual fact their boss-boy had visited Terapa but had not lodged any complaint. I understand that some mosquito nets had actually been confiscated during a search for stolen property but that one boy, who complained, had been permitted to see if his own gear was among it but found that it was not. This suggests that other natives may have, as frequently occurs, taken advantage of a police search to steal gear and blame its absence on the searchers.

I suggest that to give the natives opportunities of complaining quarterly labour inspections be carried out by an A.D.C. not connected with the line. This would be no reflection on government officials connected with the line but would reassure the native mind that they were being taken an interest in. It would also help stop deserters from putting over lame excuses and generally prove advantageous.

These unjustified mass desertions, however, must be stopped, and the only way to do so is by effective punishment. Fines, particularly if levied in pigs or other articles dear to the native heart, might serve the purpose for a while, but not in all cases. I fear that imprisonment under usual conditions is not a sufficient punishment as I know that many would welcome it as a change from carrying. Corporal punishment, especially if public, would be effective in some cases, and I recommend its introduction. If thought necessary its use could be restricted to certain areas and by officers of a certain rank, although I am certain that if all justices were allowed to order it where necessary, there would be little, if any, abuse of the power.

To my mind the most effective punishment would be the introduction of special prisons near to the various lines of communication where the most rigorous conditions, including pack-drill, should be constantly enforced. Sentences should be short at first so that ex-prisoners could spread the news of its hardships, and later increased if found necessary. Officers from T.M.G. Bay recall the wonderful effect the Wewak gaol under W.O. Allen had as a crime deterrent; prison regulations were strictly adhered to and the constant hard work of breaking coral under a blazing sun, proved wonderfully effective. Something along those lines with experienced gaolers and warders in charge would soon solve the problem.

Native situation.

No cases of serious crime were reported to or dealt with by the patrol and only a few minor disputes had to be settled. A number of natives of taxable standard attempted



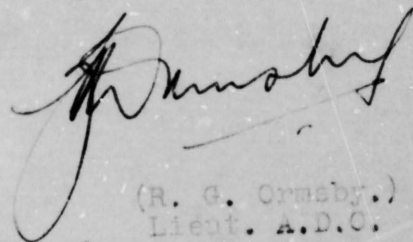
ive Situation. (continued)

to evade lining; presumably from fear of being recruited. Most of them were soon collected and in some cases of deliberate failure to line after being warned to do so were fined. One particularly bad case was punished by imprisonment. Otherwise village affairs were in a pretty good state; better than on my previous visits to the area.

One V.C. was fined for failure to clean his road - a particularly glaring instance - and two villages were warned to clean their at once. The fine was made payable in kind so that it could be evenly apportioned between the village women - the real offenders.

It was noted that a number of youths from some villages had left (probably to get out of work on ricefields) and gone to work for U.S. soldiers in the Hsiu sub-district. The matter is worthy investigation. Some deserters from Bulldog are also said to have done the same.

Excellent work continues to be done on the rice areas and I estimate that more than twice the original expectation has been cleared. There is no doubt that constant reiteration by officers of the need for them to work has had a good effect.



(R. G. Ormsby.)  
Lieut. A.D.C.

DS.

301 3117  
1942/3

P/R No.

STATION:- KAIRUKU

DISTRICT:- LAKEKAMU

AREA PATROLLED:- COASTAL VILLAGES FROM

YULE ISLAND TO LESI

PATROL OFFICER:- LT. R. G. ORMSBY

DATE:- 2/19 JANUARY 1943.





- January 17 On by canoe to Lasi. Checked names of recruits previously warned and arranged their despatch to Kairuku.
- 18 Completed work at Lave for Lasi and Biaru then continuing on to Ioksa.
- 19 Checked recruits for Ioksa - leaving in the middle of the day for Waiaa by canoe. Went ashore Waiaa arranged arrangements for recruits and after dinner continued on to Kairuku arriving 4 a.m.

### Recruiting

A total of 287 recruits were obtained during the patrol and forwarded to Kairuku for signing on. It was originally intended that all of these recruits would go to Kanosia but in view of later instructions, those fit for heavy labour will be despatched to Bulldog. Fortunately the possibility of such emergencies arising had been anticipated and all recruits were informed that they were being recruited for work wherever necessary and that they would not necessarily be able to stay where they were first sent. This was done so that they could not claim to have been recruited under false pretences. In addition they were told that although they were only signing on for one year, it was quite possible that if present conditions existed they would be re-signed as soon as this contract terminated. Reasons were explained and I think that if this procedure is followed at every opportunity they will soon realise the necessity of the situation.

Very few potential recruits are now left - and practically none of carrying standard. Some carriers could be obtained by a gradual replacement of ~~unsuitable~~ fit boys working on unskilled light labour by B. class boys but this will be a long job.

Perhaps 50 recruits are available from the swamp people of the bush Mekeo but for several reasons it will probably be wiser to leave them for a little while. This matter is referred to in a separate report. Probably another 40 recruits will be obtained shortly from natives of Hou Rapa and Babiko villages together with a few census evaders from this patrol.

This will completely denude the district of suitable recruits, and, although, in a desperate emergency a total of perhaps another hundred, could eventually be scraped up from the sub-district their absence for longer than a month would probably cause serious food shortages in the villages.

### Deserters.

Approximately 60 deserters were apprehended during the patrol and returned to employment. Only in a few cases was serious difficulty encountered and these natives were eventually apprehended by their relatives. A good sign was the fact that some V.C.'s are now returning deserters practically as soon as they arrive in their villages. As far as could be ascertained at the conclusion of the patrol there were no deserters outstanding in the villages visited. Unfortunately this is not likely to last for very long.

An attempt was made to analyse reasons for desertion from the various areas with a view to suggesting methods of prevention. In no case did any native suggest that ill-treatment was a cause, though some claimed their own ill-health as an excuse.

The health of the deserters from the Bulldog L. of C. was frequently found to be very bad. Although this is partly accounted for by hardships on the bush journey home, a number of them did not appear to have ever been suitable for carrying. I cannot stress too strongly the need for adequate medical care on this line. Bulldog itself has a very unhealthy reputation and this coupled with the mountain carrying is producing a high mortality rate. With the transfer of Captain Curtis the line was left without a doctor at all (and only



one medical assistant) Where one doctor and several European assistants would not be too many. With the coming increase of labourers in this area I doubt if one doctor would suffice. Not only is one needed to care for them on the spot, but there should be a qualified man to examine them before they are sent upstream. Much time has been lost and extra work caused by unfit natives being called on to do work which is too heavy for them the result being either desertions or sickness or both. In addition there are frequent attempts to evade recruitment or heavy work by feigning incapacity and it takes a doctor or medical assistant of many years experience to weed out the malingerers from those genuinely ill.

While writing the above paragraph a medical assistant called at this office en route to Terapo. This will alleviate the position slightly, but I am convinced that more are necessary. In practically every village where there are boys working at Bulldog I was approached by a deputation asking for medical conditions there to be improved. I assured them that everything I could do would be done as I am convinced that this is a genuine matter. It is not that the medical staff on the line are not making every effort at present - I am sure they are - but that it would seem from the reports that the staff is inadequate.

Although sickness was sometimes claimed as an excuse for desertions from the Port Moresby end I can see no evidence of it being true. Most of the desertions from the Kokoda L. of C. seem to come from natives on their way to work, and as far as I can see are caused by either fear of the unknown or what is far more likely, sheer disinclination to work. This is particularly true of the Waima group of natives. Most of them have never in their lives done more work than was necessary to earn their tax, and are doing their utmost to continue in the same way. Many of them have deserted two and three times and have done little, if any, actual work. The crowning example is one native who during the last few months has been apprehended no fewer than five times and escaped on each occasion save the last. He is now serving a sentence in the Kairuku gaol/

I am still of the very definite opinion that a reduction in the number of deserters depends on two main factors - quick apprehension and effective punishment. Unfortunately most deserters succeed in getting at least a week and frequently a month in their villages. This encourages them to risk punishment to achieve the same result on the next occasion. Unfortunately it usually takes so long for lists of deserters to reach here that the natives have already been for some time in their village before we are aware of the fact. V.C.'s are in most cases doing their best to apprehend deserters but are being seriously hindered by the runaway's relatives who naturally desire to keep him with them as long as possible. In this connection I suggest an additional regulation making any native who harbours or aids a deserter, or fails to assist a V.C. or officer in apprehending a deserter, guilty of an offence.

As regards effective punishment - the remarks made in my last patrol report still stand. I have since seen the new orders providing fine or imprisonment as a punishment. I do not wish to be thought unduly severe but I would like to see provision made that both could be inflicted for the same offence. A sliding scale of fines varying with the time the deserter had been at liberty and the imprisonment varied according to the facts of the actual desertion. Actually a desertion frequently consists of two offences - firstly the running away from work which can often be best dealt with on his return to work; and secondly his evasion of apprehension in his own district which is obviously best dealt with on the spot.

(D.S. 34)  
D. Stone  
1/12

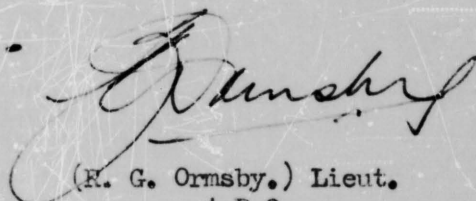
X

V.C.'s and Counsellors in all villages were warned to look out for deserters passing through their territory and by their help several deserters have been arrested on their way home. It is a difficult task however as such deserters almost invariably claim to be going on a government message or that they have been finalised. The last lot apprehended at Oiapu produced a paper which they stated was an urgent letter for Kairuku; fortunately the counsellor was able to read and soon exploded their story. In this ~~suggestion~~ connection I suggest the introduction of some sort of token which could be carried by all genuine cases and produced at ferries, villages etc. - any easily identified article could be used but for a start I suggest a used shotgun cartridge. The production of this would frank a party over ferries etc. and any apparent labourers without it could be brought to the nearest officer for investigation.

#### Native Situation .

The Waima and Kivori group of villages are still a constant source of trouble. Apart from the constant difficulty with deserters from these villages there is great difficulty in getting even such little things as firewood and food for police. A separate report is being furnished concerning delay in reporting a landed plane. It was consequently necessary to make a fairly long stay in this area and shake them up a little. Even so there are still quite a few census defaulters dodging between there and Hisiu and attempts are being made to round them up. I think it will be necessary to visit these people frequently for a little while in order to impress upon them the necessity of obeying government orders promptly. Their V.C.'s are, I think, doing their best but they have a very difficult lot to handle and I am taking every opportunity of backing them up. The Pinupaka V.C. deserves a special mention for good work done in this area.

Apart from this the other villages are in fairly good order; some property suspected of being stolen was found in Pinupaka but enquiries into this have not been finalised. There has been a big influx of army clothing and odds of ends into these villages - mostly I think traded down from Hisiu and the MaruManu evacuees. I would like a definite ruling about property of this nature which has probably been obtained by more or less illegal means although it is quite likely that some of it has been given or traded away by Europeans. A certain proportion is ~~probably~~ probably stolen by deserters but this is very difficult to prove.

  
(R. G. Ormsby.) Lieut.  
A.D.O.

*assistants*

*Division made in vol. 0 Ser 84. Vol 17 p 474.*



AUSTRALIAN MILITARY FORCES.

DS2/3/257

HQ,  
ANGAU,  
14 Mar 43.

D.O.,  
KAIRUKU.

OUR 87 OF 23/1/43 - PATROL REPORT - LT ORMSBY.

Shows good work.

Standing Orders are being amended to include section 84  
of M.L.O. (Papua).

A ruling by L.S.O. regarding army clothing found in  
possession of natives is attached.

*Now being finalized 14/3*

*B/C for attachment of  
circular on 17/3*

*Circular attached.  
17/3*

Major,  
A.A.G. (Dis.).

DS.

301 3 118  
1942/3

P/R No.

STATION :- ONONGE

DISTRICT :- LAKEKAMU

AREA PATROLLED :- ONONGE TO KANGSIA and

RETURN.

PATROL OFFICER :- CAPT. W.R. DISHON

DATE :- 11/30 JANUARY 1945.



ONONGE POLICE CAMP,  
February 2nd., 1943.

UIHUKU  
D O  
11/2/43

D S 2/3

The District Officer,  
KAIRUKU.

Report of Patrol from Ononge to Kanosia.

Personnel: Capt. W. R. Dishon; A.C's DEAFIARI and SINAMAINO; 20 SIGUFE and TAFADÉ carriers.

Object: Location and improvement of track from ONONGE to KANOSIA.

Duration: 11th. January, 1943 to 30th. January, 1943 (both inclusive).

DIARY.

January 11th. Monday: To VISI and camped.

January 12th. Tuesday: To SIGUFE and camped. Summoned carriers from there and from TAFADÉ.

January 13th. Wednesday: To UI Rest House and camped.

January 14th. Thursday: Along native hunting track to summit of KUIMBIKUM, thence abrupt descent of approx 3000 feet to IDE Creek. Along IDE Creek for about one and a half hours thence to gap known as DONGO in IDE-MANDE divide. Camped.

January 15th. Friday: Skirting MANDE side of divide in gradual descent to MANDE River. Made camp on MANDE.

January 16th. Saturday: Crossed MANDE at camping spot - proceeded downstream for about ten minutes and then made steep ascent of HOMBOLKUM to top of MANDE-VEIMAURI divide. Followed compass bearing of 230 degrees mag. and camped on what was later ascertained to be eastern branch of Kanosia creek.

January 17th., Sunday: Proceeded downstream to junction with main Kanosia Creek - thence along defined track to Galley Reach Plantation - then to Kanosia, arriving 9.30 a.m.

January 18th & 19th.: At Kanosia - correspondence and preparing for return trip.

January 20th. Wednesday: Returned to previous camping spot on eastern branch of Kanosia Creek. Carriers and police commenced clearing track along ridge towards MANDE-VEIMAURI divide.

January 21st. Thursday: Clearing track through bush.

January 22nd. Friday: To camp along MANDE- VEIMAURI divide, cutting and marking way on route.

January 23rd. Saturday: To camp half-way down HOMBOLKUM. Carriers clearing and roughly grading track.

January 24th. Sunday: Crossed MANDE and proceeded upstream for 1½ hours to place known as Jacka's Flat, where erection of native material store commenced for stores transported from coast by coastal carriers.

January 25th., Monday: Store completed with what building material available.

January 26th. Tuesday: To DONGO and camped.

January 27th. Wednesday: Descended to IDE and proceeded upstream to foot of KUIMBIKUM. Carriers clearing track.

January 28th. Thursday: Ascended KUIMB KUM and arrived at UI Rest House at midday.

January 29th. Friday: To SIGUFE and camped.

January 30th. Saturday ; To ONONGE P.C.

The purpose of this patrol was to open up a carrier track between the terminus of the bridle path under construction by Father Dubuy of the Catholic Mission and Kanosia. It was also intended to construct a store approximately two days travel from Kanosia, to allow coastal carriers to transport stores that far and to allow mountain carriers to pick them up from there. This scheme should result in the abolition of many of the fears of the mountain carriers of proceeding into the mesquite and fever belt around Kanosia. Also, the terrain to be covered by the coastal carriers is not very difficult and should present no terrors to them.

On previous occasions, patrols had been made over part of the area to be traversed, but, from where this patrol crossed the MANDE River, the previous patrols had found very rough going. The first object of this patrol then was to locate a more direct track from the spot mentioned to Kanosia and also, if possible, to locate this track over relatively easy grades. From the crossing of the MANDE, there is a very steep climb for about one hour up the side of a ridge and peak known as HOMBOLKUM. However, this would mean that loaded carriers coming from Kanosia would only have to descend this whilst carrying heavy loads. The track along this part was roughly formed and graded. From the top of HOMBOLKUM, the track located follows along the almost flat summit of the MANDE-WEIMAURI divide until it descends to the eastern branch of the KANOSIA Creek, from where the going is relatively easy until Kanosia is reached. Some time was spent in clearing the track along the ridge from the Kanosia Creek towards the MANDE-WEIMAURI divide, but the amount of food available for the native members of the patrol did not allow of similar concentration on the remainder of the road. However, it is intended to almost immediately send a further party under Sgt. API to continue the clearing and rough formation of a track. At present, it is still a very uncomfortable trip. The bush swarms with the purveyor of scrub itch, but, especially in the vicinity of the MANDE River, many types of game occur in abundance. There is also a plentitude of what is thought to be cat fish in this river.

A rough store was built on the northern bank of the MANDE, about an hour and a half above the crossing of that stream. There was a lack of suitable building and thatching materials, but the resulting edifice should serve the purpose for which it is intended, as set out above.

The climb of approximately 3,000 feet from the IDE to the summit of KUIMBIKUM is rather arduous and can only be undertaken at present with any degree of satisfaction by mountain carriers. It can, however, be improved by grading in places, although this will prove difficult owing to the steep nature of the sides of the ridge. The present ascent for mountain carriers occupies about three hours. Father Dubuy, in his continuation of the bridle path, will abate this descent and climb, by skirting the headwaters of the IDE and thence proceeding along the IDE-MANDE divide to the gap - DONGO. This, however, will need the use of explosives in several rocky places.

From the summit of KUIMBIKUM to the present terminus of Fr. Dubuy's road is approximately 1½ hours walk along a native hunting track.

When this track has been opened, the carrier time between Kanosia and this Camp should be five days, although this will, of course, be ruled by weather conditions, especially in the north-west season. Coastal carriers should reach the store on the MANDE in two days and, from there, the mountain carriers would probably reach here in three more days.

When the track is in going order, the risk of loss of stores in the rivers will be very little, unlike that which exists during the present season on the alternative route via the VALOGE River.

A sketch map showing the data referred to herein is attached.

*W. R. Dishon*  
(W. R. Dishon), Capt.  
Assistant District Officer  
O.I.C.



DISTRICT HEADQUARTERS

KAIRUKU

12 Feb 43. DS 2/3

14 FEB 1943

DS387

146.

A.A.G. (Dis)  
Adm Hqrs  
ATG.

ONONGE POLICE CAMP.

Please find attached Patrol Report and Station Journal for the month of January 43. by Capt. Dishon O.I.C. ONONGE POLICE CAMP.

The patrol concerned the opening of the ONONGE - KANOSIA track for carriers. It is making some progress through the most difficult country. However it will be got through.

The idea is that coastal carriers take loads up to the MANDE RIVER, and from there the mountain carriers take over. The latter fear, with good reason, going past the MANDE, so many of them contract fever at KANOSIA, even if they are only there for a day or two.

*W.H.H. Thompson*

MAJOR D.O.

W.H.H. Thompson.

*G.O.C*

*S. 19/2*

*W.H.H. Thompson*

*PIA 2/2*

DS.

301-3123

1942/3

P/R No.

STATION :- KAIRUKU

DISTRICT :- LAKEKAMU

AREA PATROLLED :- KAIRUKU to GILALA

and. RETURN.

PATROL OFFICER :- CAPT. G. TOOGOOD

DATE :- 8/22. MARCH 1943.



REPORT of PATROL  
to

GOILALA - WITH BENZINE AND SUPPLIES

BY: G. W. Toogood. A.D.O.

DATE: 7th March, 1943.

On instructions from the D.O. KAIRUKU, left per Launch GAWA with Cpl. McLay, 2 Police and about 50 Carriers, and proceeded to BIOTO. Cargo was unloaded and tied up for carrying, but as there were insufficient Carriers, 15 Drums Benzine and sundry other supplies, requiring about 40 more carriers, were left in charge of the V.C.. Left BIOTO and proceeded along the main road, which was in good condition, to KUBUNA. Arriving there at 2000 hours L/Cpl. ISAFE and two other Police, who had left the previous day with about a hundred carriers, reported all well and the cargo they had brought up to be all in order.

Monday, 8th March.

Left KUBUNA at 0700 hours with Police and 150 Carriers and continued along the main road to ONOBA, arriving there at 1400 hours, where the night was spent. 3 Carriers cracked up and had to be left here.

Tuesday, 9th March.

Left ONOBA at 0630 hours and continued on to OBA OBA, arriving at 1230 hours, where the night was spent. A further 5 Carriers cracked up and had to be left here.

Wednesday, 10th March.

Left OBA OBA and continued along the Mule track to DEVA DEVA, where a small supply of native food was brought in. The natives from these villages were sent back to BIOTO to bring on the rest of the cargo. Night spent at the Rest House which was in good order.

Thursday, 11th March.

Left DEVA DEVA and continued on to MAFULU, arriving there at 1300 hours. Met by Capt. Dishon who had come over from ONONGE. All cargo was re-sorted, and arrangements made for some of the carriers with half the gear to proceed to ONONGE with Capt. Dishon, the rest to GOILALA. 15 Carriers returned to coast with the L/Cpl.. As there was some difficulty in obtaining carriers for my gear at GOILALA it was decided to continue there with the cargo and bring out my gear by same carriers. Small supply of food brought in by nearby natives.

Friday, 12th March.

Left MAFULU at 0800 hours and continued on to KONE with Cpl. McLay, arriving there at about 1430 hours. Plenty of food brought in by natives.



Saturday, 13th March.

Leaving KONE at 0700 hours proceeded on over the range to the IVANE Valley, arriving there at about 1530 hours. Carriers making heavy weather of the trip. Plenty of food brought in from the many neighbouring villages.

Sunday, 14th March.

Left the IVANE Rest House at 0630 hours and arrived at GOILALA about 1230 hours, where W/O. Jacka stated all was well, but that he had just returned from a short patrol and had been so far unable to get sufficient carriers to send down the rest of my gear.

Worked in Office during afternoon assisting W/O. Jacka with several minor matters. Spent night at Goilala.

Monday, 15th March.

Left GOILALA with A.C. GAMBE and coastal carriers laden with my personal gear and several cases of Potatoes, and returned down the same track to the IVANE where the night was spent. All well in Villages. R.H. and Barracks in good order and condition.

Tuesday, 16th March.

Leaving IVANE continued back to KONE. Met the carriers sent down from DEVA DEVA on the way up with the rest of the Benzine and sundries. Plenty of food brought in from KONE Villages.

Wednesday, 17th March.

Continued back across the AUGA River to MAFULU. Shortly after leaving KONE A.C. GAMBE cracked up with bad feet, so was sent back to GOILALA. Night spent at MAFULU, where a very small supply of food was brought in from the nearby villages.

Thursday, 18th March.

Returned from MAFULU to DEVA DEVA. Met Flying Officer DeVerteuil near the KEA River on his way up to ONONGE.

Friday, 19th March.

Left DEVA DEVA and continued back down the main road to IOVELA, where the YAIFA Spotting Station is situated. Visited Spotters and arranged for their return to the coast, orders having been received for the withdrawal of their Station. Continued on to OBA OBA where the night was spent.

Saturday, 20th March.

Left OBA OBA and continued back to ONOBA, where the night was spent. No chance of two stages in a day with these carriers as they are the dregs of the villages, and make the going appear frightful.



Sunday, 21st March.

Leaving OBABA at about 0600 hours and continued on through DIEMI and IKE IKA to KUBUNA, where the night was spent. Arrived there at 1330 hours and arranged for the KUBUNA Drome to be cleared, also for the evacuation of the KUBUNA Spotters to the coast.

Monday, 22nd March.

Left KUBUNA at 0630 hours with KUBUNA Spotters and their gear, carriers having been obtained from the couple of small nearby villages. Arrived at AROPOKINA at 1230 hours. One can understand the carriers making heavy going of this and the previous stage, as they are both very hot and tiring walks. After only a few minutes waiting the launch GAWA arrived from XAIRUKU and conveyed all gear and personnel to Yule Island.

GENERAL REMARKS

There was little to comment on during this Patrol, it was merely to ensure the safe transit of Benzine, Oil and Sundry Stores for the various Mountain Spotting Stations. The main thing observed was the increasing difficulty in obtaining carriers at either end. At the coastal end there are practically no natives left in any of the villages, all having been signed-on for labour elsewhere. While at the mountain end it is becoming increasingly difficult to get the natives to come right down to the coast, owing mainly to their fear of fever and dislike of the heat. They do not object to carrying, but go bush at the first suggestion of their having to go where there are Mosquitoes, and mountain natives are hard to catch in their own locality.

→ A separate report on a solution to this problem has been submitted.

not received  
M. DSS  
4

*C. Wood*  
Capt.  
A.D.O. LAKEKAMU DIST.  
24. 3. 43.

JHE/L

DS 2/3/438


ANGAU  
3 Apr 43

DO  
KAIRUKU

PATROL REPORT - Capt G. Toogood, DO

Ref your No.249 of 26/3/43.

2. Apparently Capt Toogood is a "fast traveller" and this, no doubt, accounts for number of carriers who cracked up.
3. Considering the difficulties in obtaining carriers in this area, it is suggested that it would be preferable to take an extra two days on the trip.
4. Patrol Reports are not necessary for such routine jobs as this.
5. Any matter of interest met with can be dealt with by a memorandum.

  
Major  
AAG (Dis)



DISTRICT HQ.  
KAIRUKU  
26 March 43.

*AS/2-3*

*51 MAR 1943  
DS 2123*

No. 249.

A.A.G. (Dis)  
Adm HQ  
ANG.

PATROL REPORT - CAPT. G. TOOGOOD. A.D.O.

On page three of this report reference is made under the heading "GENERAL REMARKS" to the difficulty always experienced in getting mountain natives to carry to the coast.

My letter No. 241/A of 25th inst. asks for a "jeep" to obviate this difficulty.

*W.H.H. Thompson*

MAJOR D.O.

W.H.H. Thompson.

*8/c  
Papers. 1/4.*

*HAG(Dis) Do you consider that  
"Pahoe upuh" are necessary for  
routine jobs such as this? 1/4.*

*No 3  
1/4*

DS.

301 3124

1942/3

P/R No.

STATION:- KAIRUKU

DISTRICT:- LAKEKAMU

AREA PATROLLED:- MEKEO, WAIMA and

KIVORI DISTRICTS.

PATROL OFFICER:- LT. D.M. O'CONNOR

DATE:- 15/31. MARCH 1943.



REPORT OF PATROL TO THE "MEKEO", MAINA, AND SAVORI DISTRICTS  
DURING MARCH 1943 BY MAJ. J.M. O'CONNOR & CPL. H.A. SCOTT.

DS 559

Wm Doan  
DS 2/3

Police taken on patrol; L/Corpl. SAFF,  
Ics. Opu. Sevara. Manja. Warana.  
Ivara. and Lawa.

March 15th. 1943. Monday; Acting on instructions from the District Officer, Kairuku, to proceed to the Mekeo District and arrange for the visit of the Administrator to Inawaia, I left Kairuku Station in the JAWA at 9-30.0;M. taking with me my cook boy and A.S. Lawa. Leaving Kairuku we took in tow from the vessel 'H & S' a punt on which was a 3 ton Truck for the Rice Mill at Jesubaibua, Mekeo.

...the punt was to be towed to Bioto on the Ethel River from which point a road leads to Inawaia & Jesubaibua.

Soon after leaving Kairuku the Gawa ran onto a mud bank, and as the tide was then dropping, the captain of the Gawa was the alternative but to remain where he was until the tide rose.

About 11 am. I was able to obtain a canoe and in this with my party I proceeded on upstream and reached the village of Bioto just before dusk. The truck from the Rice Mill had come for me, but had gone back the driver S/Serjt. Bobbins having waited some hours for me. Made camp in the Rest House of Bioto for the night.

There are more mesquitos in this place than any place I have yet seen in Papua.

March 16th. Tuesday; At Bioto. During the night the Gawa's Captain, Tom Baker, had come up to Bioto on the tide, and by 8 am. the punt had been tied up against the bank of the stream, just opposite the village and was ready for the men from the Rice Mill to unload the truck from her deck. I decided not to wait for the truck to come from Jesubaibua...and after getting carriers left Tom Baker with the punt to await the arrival of the party to assist in unloading. ...for a spell at Inawaia...the VC. ...people had made in the village and R. House from Palm fronds in honour of the Administrator's approaching visit to the district. ...after leaving this village I met S/Serjt. Bobbins, who, with W/O. Williams handle the Rice Mill and Rice areas, with its problems of transport in the Mekeo District. S/Serjt. reported that the truck he had hoped to drive down had broken down, and he was, then, walking to Bioto to take over and drive back the new truck, which had arrived on the punt.

Reached Inawaia Rest House during the early afternoon; contacted VCs. of Inawaia & Jesubaibua & Ebon villages and told them to make the best show they could in the decoration of their villages and to bring in all people to meet the Administrator on the following day. During the afternoon called on the Mission station at Inawaia, and there met Father Colère and Brother Alexis, and some of the sisters who at once expressed their desire to accord a welcome to the Administrator, and to provide a lunch for Vice-Regal party... they should come to Inawaia. S/Serjt. Bobbins arrived back from Bioto with the new truck at about 7 P.M. ...having struck more on the troubles in the new truck. ...Bobbins suffering from a severe cold

Forwarded with Confidential Monthly Report of District for Pech & committed in Memo

Wm Doan

DDDS

DDDS

4/2/44

GOC 4/2/44

and some fever.

March 17th. Wednesday. At Inawala. S/Sergt. left in new truck to proceed to Bioto at 18 am. there to pick up the Administrator's Party.; village people engaged in decorating the houses and to read through Inawala & Jesubaibus with Palm friends.

The Administrator, General Morris, and his Party arrived about noon at Inawala village and at once proceeded to the Mission grounds. Here the Mission school children and the European personnel of the Mission were drawn up near the church, .. and opposite the Mission house on the lawn the village people were fallen in all ready to greet the Administrator. As the General entered the mission grounds, the children sang the National Anthem; .. they followed a song of welcome from the school children, and finally a short address to the Administrator read in excellent English by one of the school girls. The Administrator then having met the Mission sisters, Father Coltre and Brother Alexis, was invited into the Mission house, where the sisters had prepared a very nice lunch for the party. With the Administrator came the D.D.S. Major Elliott-Smith; the District Officer Major Thompson (Kairuku) Major Hogan and S/Sergt. Smith from ANGAU. HQRS. and ~~also~~ also Mr. Hutten. War Correspondant, and Mr. Brown. photographer from the Dept. of Information.

After lunch the Administrator gave a short address to those natives from the surrounding villages who were drawn up on the lawn in the front of the Mission House.... the pith of the speech was interpreted to the natives by the Kairuku Court interpreter, Leo Aitisi a native of Chinia village on Yale Island.

During the afternoon while the Administrator remained to talk to the Mission Staff the remainder of the party inspected the Rice Mill near Jesubaibus, .. some 2 miles from Inawala .

The Administrator, with his party left Inawala about 4 pm. for Bioto by truck and reached Kairuku that evening.

I would like to place on record here my appreciation of the splendid effort put up by Father Coltré, and all his Mission staff, .. especially the sisters, in the welcome which they gave to the Administrator.

March 18th. Thursday. At Inawala. I had been instructed by the D.O. to make a patrol of the Mokeo, Waima & Kiveri Districts, and that patrol Officer Scott would be sent to accompany me from the station, .. P/O. Scott to pick me up on patrol. I decided to leave Inawala on the following day and proceed to Mokeo.

During the morning visited the Rice Areas now being cultivated by M/O. Williams, and put in a most interesting time with Mr. Williams, who struck me as being very keen on his job. All the Rice crops I saw were looking very healthy and green, and in most cases showing a very vigorous stool in the plants.

During the afternoon inspected the village of EBOA, and ordered a few repairs to be made to houses. During the evening received letter from D.O. informing that P/O. Scott would be coming up to Kairuku on the following day in the Gama. Arranged with the local M.O. for carriers for the following day.



March 19th. Friday. Arrived for 16 carriers to be available for P/O. who was to go to the village of Oronpetana, and moved off at 8-30 a.m. towards Oronpetana;... Inspected the houses in the villages of Jeebaibua and I passed the villages and ordered some repairs to be made. Soon after leaving the Rice Mill came to a long stretch of mud and water on the road,... Reached Oronpetana about 11-30 am. ...saw two very good looking rice paddocks before reaching this village. Fell in with people here in the village and inspected them. Arranged for 4 fresh carrier carriers to report to me at Bepee on the following morning. After lunch at Oronpetana moved on and came to Bepee at 3-45 pm. Fell in the villagers and found one deserter here. Received letters from D.O. sent on to me by P/O. Scott per AC. at 7-40 pm.

March 20th. Saturday. After breakfast sent carriers ahead with AC. Severa, who had come to me on the previous night. Instructing the AC. to halt at Inavauni Rest House. Had talk with VC of Bepee and learned of the presence of some 5 more deserters in the village of Inavauni;... Inspected the village of Bepee and instructed the VC. re certain repairs to houses. and moved on AC. Laua with me as interpreter. Leaving the village at 9-45 am. we came to the Angaba River at 11-15 am. and crossed per the ferryman's canoe. and reached the Inavauni Rest House at 11-35 am. An excellent R. House at Inavauni. After some lunch fell in the village people and inspected them;... the deserters I wanted were said to be in the bush, near the village. Left the matter of arresting these men with the VC. of Inavauni and his people and left with him AC. Severa with instructions to not come to me without the 5 deserters I required.; Sent the carriers ahead of me and inspected the village houses;... for the most part in good order. Gave instructions for some repairs to houses. Some natives to 'make talks' to me here but no court cases. VC. Ben Pakoi of Imong village reported to me here....at some <sup>TIME</sup> this VC's village was situated near the road between Inavauni & Rarai, and was called Ifi-Ifou,..but this village was now moved back some miles to the North West(as I judged) and was built in the foothills. Moved off a little after 2 pm. and came to the small village known as Rarai 3 at 3-10 pm...and soon afterwards reached the main village of Rarai,..built in two parts and known as Rarai 1 & 2. respectively. Found my 'camp' all ready here in the small, but very well built R. House. - Paid off 14 of my carriers...and later arranged for more to report to me on the following morning. Before leaving Bepee in the morning I had left instructions for Cpl. Scott to come on to me direct to Rarai from Bepee on the following morning.

March 21st. Sunday; At Rarai. Cpl. Scott arrived with his six carriers and the party of police for the patrol at 8-30 am... having left Bepee that morning. Fell in and inspected the ~~area~~ people of Rarai, and found a more deserters. Inspected the village houses and ordered some repairs to be made. Moved on at 11 am. with Cpl. Scott towards Veipa,..carriers and Police except AC. Laua, having already been sent ahead to the Veipa R. House. The Rarai Rice Paddock was inspected en route.. this crop, looked well,..but after all the recent rain,..weeds were growing apace and will need pulling out soon;...before they ARE

established. Reached the village of Aso Aso at noon;...inspected the few people in the village,...found one deserter here, inspected the village houses and moved on and arrived at Veipa at a little after 1 pm. The VCs. of Inawi and Veipa reported and later the VC of Aipeana came in. After a talk with these VCs. and others sent out for more deserters.

March 22nd. Monday. At Veipa. During the morning with Cpl. Scott I inspected the villagers of Aipeana and Veipa;...ordered several houses to be pulled down and some to be re-thatched in both villages.

Called on the Mission during the afternoon;...I had instructed that the Veipa people fall in during the late afternoon,..but rain fell and I cancelled this arrangement. Sent 15 deserters to Kairuku with Ac. Severa and a VC....the party to go via Biote, I instructed Ac. Severa to put the prisoners on to canoes with the VC. and then to send them to Kairuku, and to retain the handcuffs of the prisoners and to bring these with him and to await me at Bereina.

The VC. of Veipa assured me that no more deserters had thus far arrived home to the village,..even though these men may have been reported as having left their places of employment.

March 23rd. Tuesday. 1943. Cpl. Scott and self got away at 7-15 am ahead of the carriers and police;... I kept Ac. Dpu only with me,... Came to Inawi village and had a good 'fall in' of the people....some men wished to see me <sup>2</sup>the recovery of a knife and these I instructed to proceed to the Rest House at Bereina;...there were a few people with Yaws & ulcers here;...An inspection of the village showed me that there were several houses in poor state of repair,..ordered the repairs to be effected,..instructing the VC. that all these jobs which have to be done to the houses of the men when the Govt. has taken as workers on carriers will have to be done by those men who still remain in the village. Leaving Inawi we moved on taking the bad and partly inundated road which leads through the village of Inauea to Bereina, and instructed Cpl. Safe with the main party, who had caught us up at Inawi, to take the better and more direct road to Bereina. Most of the people in the small village of Inauea were not 'at home' and after a brief halt in this place we again moved on and came to Angabunga Plantation,...called here for a little while and spoke to the half caste manager, who complained that the Inauea men were not cutting the road from Inauea to Bereina which runs through the Plantation,... I later instructed the VC. of Inawi, who looks after this small village, to see that the people did this necessary road work. Leaving the plantation at 11-15 am..we moved on towards Bereina;... there was much mud and water on the road and progress was slow. Reached Bereina at 1-30 pm. and found the main party all established and a meal ready for us. During the afternoon in GNM. and 'native talks'.... settled the matter of the knife, which the Inawi people had brought to me, out of court.

March 24th. Wednesday. After breakfast had a good 'fall in' of the village people, and inspected them;...some sore legs among these people..ulcers. made a note of these, but did not send them to the Kairuku hospital then,..I later was in touch with W/O. Simpson, Medical assistant at Kairuku by letter, and decided to leave these sore leg cases until Mr. Simpson was ready for them and there was room for them in the native hospital. Gave some women of Bereina a



Leave Pass to proceed to Kanasia to see their husbands who are now working on the plantation... I had in mind when I did this, that the Manager of Kanasia encourages this practice on the part of the relations of plantation workers, as long as too many natives do not go to Kanasia at one time. AG. Severza reported during the day with the handicuffs which he had brought back from Diato.

At 4 pm. I sent Cpl. Safe, 2 Acs. and the VC. Beata Aini of Bereina to Waima with instructions to arrest as many of the deserters from that District as they could find, instructing them then to go straight on to Kivori and round up what Deserters could be heard of there.

.... I gave VC. Beata Aini of Bereina a complete list of all the deserters wanted who were alleged to have become A.M.I. - from Waima and Kivori.

March 25th. Thursday. At Bereina. After breakfast sent the carrier ahead to Waima R. House. In C.M. and listening to various talks from local natives. Cpl. Scott and self left Bereina at 10-10 am. and after a most enjoyable walk through the attractive garden lands of the Waima people came to the Waima Rest House at 11-45 am... here the Waima VCs and councillors too numerous to mention awaited us, some of them being non-smokers. In the afternoon the party party I had sent to make arrests of deserters on the previous day reported to me;... only 5 men had been arrested, the others, the VCs assured me were not in the villages... and had not been seen in the district since they went away to work for the Govt....

During the afternoon inspected some 9 of the Waima villages, also saw the people of each village as I passed through it. I had many requests from the village women here and all through the Waima & Kivori Districts for their husbands... and since some cases brothers, to be allowed to return to them from their places of employment as workers & carriers. The villages were clean as I saw them this day, and considering the few men left in the villages who were fit for the ordinary village jobs, the houses were in fairly good state of repair. Instructions given to VCs for repairs I thought necessary.

March 26th. Friday. After breakfast sent 2 Waima VCs with 5 carriers and 3 Portia natives to be attached to the Govt. to Kivori with letter to the D.O. During the morning Cpl. Scott and self inspected all those Waima villages which we had not seen on the previous afternoon;... The villages were very clean, some houses in need of repairs, and the women had the same requests to make concerning a visit to their men folk at work as were made to me on the previous afternoon. After lunch sent the main party ahead to the

Kivori R. House, and I with Cpl. Scott called on the Mission staff of the Waima Mission, and then walked to Kivori reaching the R. House at dusk. The Kivori R. House & Barracks are in good order and both are good spacious buildings.... the grass around these buildings had been quite recently cut. Before going to the Rest House we inspected the village of Herararu of the Kivori Group.

27th. March Saturday: Had a general fall in of the People of Kivori.. that is of Herararu, Kivori Kui and Kivori Pee villages;... a few ulcers were noticed amongst the people, many women asked for their men folk to be returned to them from their Govt. work;... In C.M. during the latter half of the morning. During the afternoon inspected the villages of Kivori Pee and Kivori Kui, some houses in both villages were ordered to be repaired. Sent one deserter from the village near back to Heraru with a letter to the D.O. the VC. of Kivori. ... in the afternoon this man.

March 28th. Sunday. At Kivori. Police washing clothes. Held rifle inspection during the morning.

March 29th. Monday. After breakfast Cpl. Scott and self set off for the village of MOU, ... calling on both Missions at Kivori and Waia as we passed them. Halted at Aviana village and contacted what people were present. ... a native case brought to be here, ... instructed those concerned to go to the R. House at MSA, and sent 2 VCs. to arrest 2 men working on Ma'era Plantation who were wanted for trial. Moved on and came to the Plantation of Ma'era and spoke with the half-caste Manager, English. After a brief spell here we moved on and arrived at MOU and found the main party already 'camped' and a meal ready for us. During the afternoon held C.N.M. and made 2 convictions.

March 30th. Tuesday; After breakfast had a fall in of the villagers of MOU. Picked out some cases of Yaws & ulcers to be sent to the Native Hospital at Kairuku. Heard some complaints made by the Ma'era Plantation Manager against 3 of his N/labourers and duly admonished these 3 labourers. In C.N.M. and convicted 10 MOU men for failing to clean village surroundings. Inspected the village and ordered some repairs to houses. Sent the main party under Cpl. Safe to RaPa village... via PinuPaka. Taking AC. Upe with us and the VC. of Bereina, whom I had kept with me as interpreter and guide, Cpl. Scott and self set off for the village of Babiko. I had arranged for a canoe to meet us and take us through the water lanes of the swamp which separates Babiko from Mou. The canoe... in fact 3 canoes, were ready for us at a point on the road from Mou to Bereina. We had no trouble in making our way along this lane through the swamp and reached Babiko at about 10-50 am. Had a fall in of the people of Babiko, ... I think that 25% of the younger men had run to the bush, ... though the VC. did not tell us so.; ... Inspected the village and instructed that some house repairs be effected. by those men who are left in the village... the council went round the village with us... the VC. being unable to walk any distance... the VC. is more or less a cripple, and I would suggest that this man be replaced by a man who can move about.; ... I told the VC. that it would better now that he resign in favour of a younger man... I could see no man in the village fit to take the position except one man, who had before held office but had himself resigned some years ago..... The VC. agreed to take his son to Kairuku in the near future in the hope that the P.O. would agree to his son's appointment in place of the father. After a light lunch left Babiko and walked through the long grass to the banks of the Angabunga River, where I had arranged for a canoe to be ready to take my small party to RaPa village. A full Flood was touching and just overflowing the banks of the river, ... and the strong current carried us to that point on the river opposite RaPa ~~village~~ in about 1 1/2 hours. We landed and walked for half a mile through mud, and came to RaPa... a large village, and in good clean condition. After some trouble the VC. fell in his village people and I had an inspection, ... picked out some 7 cases of ulcers for the VC. to send to the Kairuku Native Hospital; ... listened to countless natives asking (demanding almost) that their menfolk be returned to them from the working fronts. Ordered canoe transport for the following



Day to take the Party back to Kairuku.

March 31st. Wednesday: After breakfast loaded the patrol gear on 2 canoes, inspected the village of RaPa, and instructed the VC. to make certain repairs to some of the houses. Before leaving RaPa I made it clear to the VC. and those of the villagers present when I spoke to him, that the work of repairing village houses, and the work of the initial digging of new garden lands for the new gardens must be done by those men who remain in the village both for their own houses & gardens and for those of the men who were away on Govt. work as carriers etc. Left RaPa at 9 am. and reached the Station at Kairuku at 11-40 am. and in the afternoon reported to the D.O. Major Thompson.

REMARKS.

Rice Growing in the Mokee. I know little about Rice growing, but have spent many years farming in Australia, and I was struck by the health and vigour of the rice crops I saw growing, both in the plots being farmed by W/O. Williams at Jesubaibua, and by the several village paddocks of rice I saw which had been planted by the natives without the aid of mechanical cultivation of any kind. Surely there must be great possibilities in the Mokee District for Rice Production, the suitable land is there in plenty. I think the foundations of a great industry have been started in the Mokee, and I look for big things there in rice production in the future.

Native Labour supplied from the Mokee, Wai'a, and Kivori Districts. ;

In some of the Mokee villages, and in nearly all the Wai'a and Kivori villages we visited I was approached by the wives, and Mothers of natives who are at present working for the army, asking me to have these men sent back to them, as they could make their new gardens, which entails heavy digging work ( in breaking up new land ) only if their menfolk were sent back to them to do this heavier work of their yearly round of tasks. Many of the women concerned have 4 and 5 children, and I cannot help feeling that the request is a reasonable one. Would it not be possible to give every native labourer who has family responsibilities, a period of a month's leave each year, in order to help in this initial garden work, as if the native village gardens cease to produce the food mentioned these native women and children will become a problem, and the feeding of these people may become a burden on the Govt. even as it has in the case of the more favoured Haruhaha & Porohaha Native Refugees.

Other areas are managed slightly.

All very difficult, but we need the men!

5/26/4

D. G. Hanna Lt.

Kairuku; 5th April 1943.

JHS/

DS 2/3/684

ANGAU  
29 Apr 43

DC  
KAIRUKU

Patrol Report by Lieut O'Connor  
LEKEO - WAINA - KIVORI

Your minute 8.4.43.

- 2. Quite an interesting report.
- 3. Native Labour supplied from Makeo-Waina and Kivori Districts  
Reports from other areas from which majority of adult males  
absent indicate that the old men, women and children are getting  
along very well and have excellent gardens.  
The problem is difficult but we need the men.

G.3(1)  
for personal return  
(O'Connor)  
2/4

DS ✓  
Returned  
Mf 30/4. Jm 30/4

Major  
ADES



DS.

301 3127  
1942/3

P/R No.

STATION :- BULLDOG.

DISTRICT :- LAKEKAMU

AREA PATROLLED :- EDIE CREEK & WAW DISTRICTS

PATROL OFFICER :- LT. C. H. RICH.

DATE :- 26 APRIL / 13 MAY 1943.

No. 1 Lake Kama District  
Wau  
00

REPORT OF A PATROL TO EDIE CREEK & WAU DISTRICTS BY

CLEM. H. RICH. A. D. O.

Purposes of Patrol.

- (1) Pay off and re-engage all natives under multiple Contracts of Service.
- (2) Ascertain the results of the new carrying system just commenced.
- (3) Inspect and advise all A.N.G.A.U. supervisors in their respective duties.
- (4) Inspect living and working conditions of all Native Labour employed on the line.

Monday April 26. 1943.

Accompanying the C.R.E. 11 Aust Div, Lieut-Col. Reinhold left Bulldog per Jeep at approximately 0930 hrs, except for the fact that there had been a recent landslide the entire journey to Dead Chinaman would have been undertaken by jeep. It seemed there would be about an hours delay while the Bulldozer cleared the road so it was decided to continue the journey by foot. On arriving at Dead Chinaman Cpls Tregalus & Collins (both of ANGAU) reported. Enjoyed a short spell and cup of tea during which time the first of the carriers began to arrive in from Bulldog. Informed Cpl Tregalus that all Labour matters would be fully dealt with on my return. In the past, most of the portage has been done by the carriers leaving Bulldog and completing the entire journey - Centre Camp or beyond as the case may be. This method necessitated the carrying of extra blankets, warm clothing etc., for the higher altitudes. With the new system the distance was divided into sections each stage being a reasonable one day return trip, the only excess gear a native was obliged to carry was a packet of biscuits which served as his mid-day meal. The latter system has numerous advantages, by no means the least of which is the knowledge of a good meal and quarters on their return, and each carrier knowing that his day is 'finished' on his return, tends to make him complete the journey as soon as possible and avoid the possibility of wet cargo due to the usual afternoon rains. Moved off and arrived at Fox Camp approx 1700 hrs Cpl Green (ANGAU) reported. Last hour or so of the journey was completed in light rain which continued through the night.



(2)

Tuesday 27 April '43.

Left Fox's Camp 0830 hours and after 4 hours walking arrived at Centre Camp, W.O. Hyland (ANGAU) reported. Nothing of interest to report on during the day.

Wednesday 28 April '43.

Left Centre Camp at 0900 hours. Colonel Reinhold decided to take the survey track but advised me to use the carrier track and this I did. After going for about half an hour we crossed the Elowa and the track then led up hill, in parts almost vertical, and the going was pretty tough. Continued up hill to arrive at Fox's Gap 6000 ft where a short spell was called. Continued on, and, still climbing to arrive at Gorge Camp at 1700 hours Cpl Bourke (ANGAU) reported. I think I voice the opinion of the whole party, when I say that an early night was the popular vote, and the extreme, cold, bleak weather supplied yet another excuse for the opinion. The carriers employed on these sections are certainly doing a mans job, and ~~surely~~ dont get any comfort or assistance from the weather which as already mentioned is very cold, and invariably wet.

Thursday 29 April '43.

Leaving the Gorge Camp at 1000 hrs the track led steeply up a sharp spur to a height of approx 8000 ft, from the summit it dips sharply into the Gorge only to again rise on the opposite side. Arrived at Elowa Basin, Colonel Reinhold's Headquarters at 1300 hrs. Col Reinhold and Lieutenant Fox (ANGAU) who came by the survey route arrived a couple of hours later. Cpl Gee of ANGAU stationed here reported. A very cold night was experienced, and even four blankets were not sufficient to keep one warm.

Friday 30 April '43.

Left Elowa Basin at 0900 hrs, passed Eccelaton's Gap and after a long and tiring day, over an abominable track arrived at Johnson's Gap 1600 hours. For the most part the track led through Moss forests where a false step would easily result in a broken limb or other serious injury. The whole place presents a very eerie atmosphere and its a pleasure to get back in the timber country. Sgt Wales and Cpl Halliday both of ANGAU reported. The former is not enjoying the best of health and as the R.M.O. has suggested a change to a lower altitude, I have decided to take this man back with me on the return journey and station

(3)

Friday 30 April '43 Cont:

station him at Dead Chinaman and transfer Cpl Tregalus.

Saturday 1 May '43.

Left Johnson's Gap 0830 hours the track leading down Mt Wau, quite a change to be going down hill, even though in places it was very steep there were no complaints, these I guess will come on the return journey. Arrived at No.7. Camp where a halt was called for lunch. After lunch we followed the made road in to Edie Creek. In places the road was very boggy, but having a normal grade the going was reasonably easy.

Sunday 2 May '43.

At Edie Creek as the guest of Col. Reinhold.

Monday 3 May '43.

Major Elliott-Smith (D.D.S.) and Major Vertigan D.O.Wau arrived per Jeep and extended an invitation to visit Wau, which invitation was gladly accepted. During the afternoon discussed Official matters with Major Elliott-Smith. Stayed the night at Wau.

Tuesday 4 May '43.

Leaving Wau at 1000 hours per Jeep returned to Edie Creek and after lunch visited the Native Hospital Sgt Cox E.M.A. reported. While at the hospital I took the opportunity of 'paying off' all natives under multiple contracts and re-engaging them for a further 12 months. Sgt Cox has a very good hospital and is doing an excellent job. After dealing with the financial side of the question I had all the patients assembled and as far as possible explained the present position of things in general, and at the same time pointed out their obligations and what we expected of them. The talk was given in Police Motuan and I feel sure they all understood and I trust harangue will have the desired results and tend to keep them more contented.

Wednesday 5 May '43.

Finalised labour matters in the hospital and then visited the compound under the control of Sgt Rossiter. All buildings were in good order and the surroundings clean. Sgt Rossiter is in charge of the first stage of the carry line from this end and employs approx 120 natives. No complaints were received from either party and here again all those due to pay off were attended to and re-engaged. One native in particular APA of IOKEA on being paid off handed me back the money marking



Wednesday 3 May '43.

repeating that he was quite content to work for the Army for the duration without pay and when the war was over the Army could give him whatever they considered a reasonable offer. It was quite some time before I could persuade him that it was his due, and provided they all did their utmost, we in turn would see that everything possible would be done for their comfort and that they would be paid wages due. I am fully convinced that APA was quite genuine in his feelings and I only hope he can influence others with the same ideas. He<sup>2</sup> again the entire line were given a "pep" talk copy of which is attached to this report. Of the moneys paid out yesterday and to-day an amount of £113 was handed back with requests that it be sent to their relatives. While perhaps this is not quite in order I decided to accept the money and will arrange to have it distributed as requested. The point as I see it is, those due for wages receive between £2 and £4 ~~more~~ there is not Trade Store where they can make any purchases and as they are re-engaged for a further 12 months its not likely they would have any of the money left, it would either be stolen or lost. Under the circumstances I am agreeing to their request and feel that anything we may do to assist them will keep them more contented and lessen the desertions.

Thursday 5 May '43.

Left Edie Creek and arrived at No.6 Camp 1300 hrs. Lieut K. Johnson reported, he has with him Sgt Scott and Cpl Rosenwarne. Spent the afternoon on labour matters, attending to all those who were to be paid off and signed. Inspected the accomodation and found everything most satisfactory. They have ample space and the surroundings were nice and clean. Rations issued were according to the scale and no complaints were received. Cpl Schultz who is in charge of the carrier line from this point to Johnson's Gap reported and had no complaints other than the fact that it was a very strenuous carry up the mountain and as he was class B found it difficult to follow the line daily. Have suggested that if he does the journey two or three times a week this will suffice.

Friday 6 May '43.

Leaving Camp No.6 arrived at Camp No.7 where Cpl McCabe reported. During the afternoon attended to his line and also to the line controlled

(5)

Friday 6 May '43 cont:

controlled by W.O.O'Kane. Each of these N.C.O's have 60 labourers who are employed on clearing and grubbing, a task far more appreciated than that of carrying, and this was very evident in the general appearance of the lines inspected. Attended to labour matters and gave the usual harangue. All natives seemed reasonably happy and there were no complaints whatever.

Saturday 7<sup>th</sup> May '43.

Left Camp No.7 and began the steep climb up Mount Wau, this was much enjoyed on the outward trip, but on this occasion it is an entirely different matter. W.O.O'Kane is clearing and grubbing a ledge around the mountain and when this is done the 'carrier line' will have a much easier task. Called on W.O.O'Kane and spent a short while at his camp. Continuing on to arrive at Johnson's Gap where Sgt Wales reported and during the afternoon I attended to all labour matters at this point.

Sunday 8 May '43.

Left Johnson's Gap at 0830 hrs and commenced the long and tiring trip to Elowa Basin, though on this occasion there were ledges in the making, and being of a normal grade the going was much easier. The eerie Moss forest however was still the same. Arrived at Elowa Basin Cpl Gee. At the moment there are only three natives attached to this camp so labour matters were very quickly attended to. Once again spent a cold miserable night. It seems the sun is only visible for approximately 2 hours per day at this point owing to the ever present clouds and mist. Certainly not a wonderful place to be stationed at.

Sunday 9 May '43.

Left Elowa Basin 0900 hrs. Since the trip over a ledge has been completed from this point to the Gorge Camp and the time and energy saved is remarkable. Staying only a short time at the Gorge we pushed on to arrive at Fox Gap about 1400 hrs. During the afternoon attended to labour matters in connection with the line controlled by Cpl Bourke, everything satisfactory and the accomodation quite good for a temporary camp.

Tuesday 10 May '43.

Left Fox Gap and making good time reached the crossing on the Elowa about 10 a.m. another half hour brought us to Centre Camp W.O.Hylard.



Tuesday 10 May Cont:-

W.O.Hyland. During the afternoon attended to labour matters at this point.

Wednesday 11 May '43.

Left Centre Camp and visited W.O.Bannon who has with him 3 N.C.O's and 150 natives they are employed clearing, grubbing and cutting a ledge. Attended to various matters and inspected the accomodation. No Complaints. Rteurned to Centre Camp for the night.

Thursday 12 May '43.

Left Centre Camp and arrived at Fox's Camp about 1200 hours. A considerable delay was caused waiting for the carrier line to return from Centre, first of them began to come in at 1400 hours and I commenced on payments etc., finished up at 3530 hours so decided to push on to Dead Chinaman arriving at 1800 hours.

Friday 14 May '43.

So as not to delay the departure of the carrier line any longer than was absolutely necessary I commenced on labour matters at 0600 hours and was completed by 0900 hours when the last of the carriers left. Installed Sgt Wales in charge of the line here and informed Cpl Tregalus of his transfer. Left Dead Chinaman at 1100 hours and arrived at Bulldog 1600 hours.

*Good work! This patrol shows however, a general result.  
M.L.H.  
2/6/6*



.....Lieut  
A.D.O. Bulldog L of C.

7

GENERAL REMARKS.

EUROPEAN PERSONNEL. At the time of this patrol there were 33 W.O's and N.C.O's stationed along the line, all with varying experiences of handling native labour, but unfortunately all their experiences were gained in the Territory of New Guinea where 'pidgin' and not Motuan is used. Main difficulties encountered were that the natives could not understand the 'pidgin', plain English would have much better results. Notwithstanding this drawback one and all are doing an excellent job, and those stationed above 4000 ft in particular, where the weather and climate alone, are enough to test anyones patience. There are several items of equipment which I consider necessary for the comfort of these men and I am submitting a recommendation which I trust will receive favourable consideration. One has to actually visit and live in these parts to fully appreciate the position.

NATIVE LABOUR. Records available show approximately 1950 natives employed on this line, of this number 200 are reported as deserters. Quite a number of these natives were indentured under multiple Contracts for a period of 6 months and it seems their times had expired so, in actual fact they are not deserters at all as they had a legal right to return to their villages. I have pleasure in reporting that nearly all these men have since returned to duty and have no complaints. It is pleasing to note that ~~at~~ since this patrol only two deserters have been reported and police have already been despatched to apprehend them. A total amount of £1472 was paid out in wages mainly to 6 months boys whose time had expired, there were certain instances where native were paid for casual labour when their claims were substantiated. As mentioned in the body of the report the carry system now operating seems to be quite satisfactory and the natives are as contented as it is possible to be with such a monotonous task to perform. Except for two stages i.e. Centre Camp to Fox Gap and Mt Wau the other stages are a reasonable days task. The two stages mentioned are certainly most difficult and the ~~rare~~ rare atmosphere is also a handicap. Progress is being made on the "benching" of both these sections and once this is complete the task will not be difficult. At the present the labour employed is doing an excellent job and complaints were few.



A. Of the £1472 paid out £700 was handed back with a request that it be paid to their relatives, necessary particulars were taken and in due course the money will be paid to those nominated. While realising this is perhaps not quite correct I feel it is the only way to ensure a contented labour line under present day conditions. I have pleasure in reporting that the relationship between the Army personnel and the natives is very good indeed, apparently the Europeans are fully aware of the part the native plays and not once charge of assault or ill treatment was reported, rather was it the opposite and if anything Soldiers are inclined to 'spoil' the labour which in certain cases is almost as bad as the other extreme. Advice on the treatment to natives was given at all points concerned. In conclusion I should like to say that I was more than satisfied with things in general along the line and I trust this position will continue.

*[Handwritten Signature]*  
 .....Lieut  
 A.D.O. Bullgog.

*[Handwritten]*  
 26/6

'PEP' TALK GIVEN IN POLICE MOTUAN.

Hari hari be dina idau. Guna guna ita idoinai noho namo herea memero haida idia gaukaraia company, haida sitoa, haida vanagi bona haida idia noho hanua idia naria. Taukurokuro inai bamona. Gabu idoinai ia namo herea.

Harihari be gabu ia dika, omi idoinai diba DIAPANI (Japan) tuari dika-na ia hawaraia. Ai Taukurokuro ai ura lasi tuari to Diapani idia ura lasi taunimanima haida idia noho, idia ura gabu idoinai idia hagovea haorea, inai dekenai tuari idia hawaraia.

Diapani edi tuari be idau idia lalowa lasi mero maraki, hahine, buluka taudia idia halala kava, hanua lalowa lasi gabu idoinai hadi kaia edi ura tamona Diapani sibona.

Harihari be ita gaukaraia kava, hua lalowa lasi, lagani lalowa lasi tuari sibona. Bema ita gowada karaia Diapani ita lulua New Guinea ia lakatani vadaini gabe eai ita ede ura gaudia bona hanua gaudia ita lalowa leu. Bema ita lalowa lasi sedila lau diba lasi tuari sibona.

Government order idia karaia Taukurokuro bona New Guinea Taudia idoinai ita gaukaraia tuari dekenai. New Guinea taudia dala karaia ani ani huaia gabeai Soldia idia tuari. To bema dala lasi aniani lasi eda bamona idia tuari karaia.

Ai Taukurokuro danu ai ema sinadia, hadawadia, natudia ai lakatani ai i mai gabu gaudau herea tuari totona. Omi danu hanua lalowa lasi hahine lalowa lasi natum lalowa lasi gowada sibona henia. Ai ema hadawadia, bona kekeni taudia, buluka taudia idoina idia gaukaraia, haida katilisi karaia, haida aniani kairaia haida palai micini karaia. Ita idoinai gowada sibona henua gabe eai ita noho namo herea.

Harihari be mase mauri dinana, gowada sibona vadaini dohore Diapani ita hadikaia ita hadibaia.

TRANSLATION.

Times have changed. Before everything was very nice, some boys worked at the plantations some at the Stores, some on the boats and others looked after the village. Europeans were the same. Everything was good.

Now things are bad, you all know that we are fighting with Japan. We (Europeans) do not want war, but Japan do not want any other people here, they want everything for themselves.

Japan's war are different they dont consider children, women or old people they kill everyone, they want the Japanese race to dominate.

These days we must work without thinking about time, and must continue to work until the war is finished. If we work hard and fight well we will chase the Japanese from New Guinea and then we can think of other things, home etc.,

The Government have ordered that all Europeans and New Guinea People must work for the war. The natives can help with roads and carrying and the soldierrrs with fighting. How can the soldiers fight if there are no roads or no food?

We white people have left our familys a long way away and come to war. You too must not think of your villages, wives and things, just work hard. Our wives, young people and old people are all working some in munition factories some making food and other making aeroplanes. We must ALL work hard if we want to win.

Now is the time for live or die, we must think ~~xxxxxxx~~ and work very hard for the war and behind we hope to beat the Japanese and make them savvy.

----- WILL



SBS/C.

DC 3/3/1261.

IN  
ARAB.  
29 Feb 45.

TO  
LAKH.

Patrol Report No. 1 - Lt G. J. Rich

G.O.C. has endorsed this report "Good work". Patrol should have very beneficial results."

2. Monday 26 April. Making each stage a one day return trip is the right idea, and enables the natives to "settle in".

3. General Remarks: European personnel. Recommendations regarding equipment not yet received.

4. Item 2: 2700 handed back. Your signal advising that proper action was taken, received. Officers are to be warned that in all such cases the proper procedure must be followed.

*All correct.  
to clear  
now on  
Pat. 17.*

*[Signature]*  
Major,  
ARAB.

Copy direct to: ADO Ballong.

Ref: 471

District Headquarters,  
KAI IOKU.  
21st June 43.

213  
3/3

D.D.S.  
A N G A U.

PATROL REPORT - LT. C. RICH.

I have commenced the numbering of Patrol Reports from this District with the enclosed one from Lt. C. Rich.

This is a most interesting and instructive report. Lt Rich should I think be congratulated on his work. I think his "Pep Talk" given in Police Motuan an excellent one, this is on last page of the Report.

Re his remarks under the heading European personnel in which he refers to the language difficulty, I think the Overseers would be wise to talk to Papuans in simple English. Opinions differ as to the spread of "pidgin English", in my opinion it is NOT coming into use to any extent in this District. I very much doubt if it ever will make much head-way. Also a working knowledge of Police Motuan is essential all over Papua labour. It is very easy language to pick up.

A I consider he was wise in accepting some of the cash from wages of natives paid off and re-engaged for distribution to their relatives in coastal villages. It will add to the contentment of these N/L's.

*W.H.H. Thomson*

Major,  
D. O.

W.H.H. Thomson.

Copt to : Lt. Rich.

*W.H.H.  
2/6  
GOC.*

*This matter will have a beneficial effect on the native labourer.*

*Copy of a memo to GOC Bullseye from 40. is attached in support of information*

*With regard to paragraph marked A - a signal has been sent to D.O. Kauruku & Lt Rich - the receipt of reply any necessary instructions will be issued*

*25  
J.C.*



DS.

301 3128  
1942/3

P/R No.

STATION :- KAIRUKU

DISTRICT :- LAKEKAMU

AREA PATROLLED :- MEKEO DISTRICT

PATROL OFFICER :- WOI J.B. PRICE

DATE :- 10/20 MAY. 1943.



Wm  
D 9  
21/5/43

REPORT OF PATROL MADE BY J. B. PRICE FROM KAIRUKU  
TO THE MEKEO DISTRICT FOR THE PURPOSE OF ARRESTING  
DESERTERS AND GIVING ANY ASSISTANCE REQUIRED TO  
O i/c MEKEO RICE MILL.

21 May 1943

Monday 10 May 43

Under instructions from the District Officer, Kairuku, I was to proceed to the MEKEO district to arrest all the deserters there and to assist S/Sgt Dobbins, Mekeo Rice Mill, as required by him. I left the station at 0930 hrs by canoe and went up the St. Joseph River to BIOTO arriving there at 1530 hrs. Contacted Capt Willis at Bioto and he informed me that the prisoners used by him, including the prisoner required by the District Officer to be returned to station, had already returned there. He told me that S/Sgt Dobbins was waiting at INUABUI with lorry. Arranged for carriers and walked to INUABUI and on arrival of carriers travelled to INAWAI-A by lorry.

Tuesday 11 May 43.

9 | Visited Rice Mill and discussed with Sgt Dobbins the matter of rice harvesting in the upper villages. He told me that Mill was not working at the moment as the tractor was out of commission and that they were working on the tractor and hoped to have it in order soon. He was working on a new house for W.O. Williams, who was at present sick, but was unable to obtain sufficient timber to complete it. He asked me to arrange for supplies of timber from upper villages. V.C. from EBOA came in with two deserters, one with a bad leg. Two other deserters in village and arranged for them to be arrested and for the four prisoners to be taken in to station by K.C. Arranged for carriers for following morning to go to BEBEO.

Wednesday 12 May 43.

Walked to BEBEO through ORIRO PETANA. The V.C.s from both these villages were absent from their villages, being in at the station. At Bebeo one deserter was arrested, but other named deserter was not in village and his two wives had left village. The rise at Bebeo gardens was being out. A.C. from Kairuku arrived with instructions that he be sent on to Recce party at KAWAPAW with stores forwarded via S/Sgt Dobbins. A.C. sent back to INAWAI-A to collect stores and mail and with letter for Sgt Dobbins asking him to arrange for necessary carriers.

Thursday 13 May 43.

Walked to BAIPA-A via RARAI. V.C. from Rarai reported at the garden and I instructed him that the rice, which was ready for cutting, be cut using what women and old men were available. Instructed police and V.C. that the deserters in BAIPA-A and APEANA be arrested. Police brought in five deserters from Baipa-a and one from Apeana. Three more deserters from WAU area taken during afternoon and I was told that the deserters from this area were just beginning to come in. V.C. from AMO AMO reported and I instructed him to cut and supply to S/Sgt Dobbins 200 lengths of WOTA timber. Inspected rice at Baipa-a which is ripe and is being cut by the women. A.C. returned from Inawai-a with stores from there for recce party and I ordered him to go on to KAWAPAW in which area he would find party.

Friday 14 May 43.

Walked to INAWI where V.C. reported and I ordered him to arrest any deserters in village. He brought in one prisoner. I was told that some deserters from WAU area had returned to INUABUI village and were there living in bush. Sent A.C. back with letter from S/Sgt Dobbins and with orders to arrest run-aways. Instructions given to V.C. that he cut and deliver to Sgt Dobbins 200 lengths of WOTA timber during following week. Deserters from WAU area were said to be coming through these villages during the night on their way to their villages. Instructed V.C. and police to arrest any passing through that night. During night 20 deserters, 6 from



BIOTC and 14 from KERETA district, were arrested by the police. During the night three prisoners escaped.

Saturday 15 May 43.

A.C. and V.C. with 22 prisoners sent back to Kairuku station. Inspected village rice garden which was in good order and with large area ready to cut. Instructed V.C. that he was to start on following Monday to cut the rice which was ripe. A further deserter taken in the village. Arranged for police to go out that night and take more deserters. Arranged for carriers next morning to go to BEREINA. No deserters found during night.

Sunday 16 May 43.

Walked to BEREINA, road overgrown with heavy grass. Two deserters arrested in village and a third boy said to be away. V.C. said there were many deserters in WAIMA villages. Instructed V.C. to arrange for V.C. from ABIARA to report to me following morning. Arranged for carriers to go to WAIMA following morning. During night third deserter taken.

Monday 17 May 43.

V.C. from ABIARA reported and I instructed him to arrest two deserters from his village, he said the boys were not in the village. Walked to WAIMA where I found V.C.s absent searching for plane. V.C.s returned to villages but found no sign of plane. Saw V.C.s and instructed them to arrest all deserters in their village - at least 13 deserters are living in bush outside villages.

Tuesday 18 May 43.

10 prisoners sent in to Kairuku station with A.C. Only five deserters were arrested and V.C.s and police seemed unable to catch any more deserters. Instructed V.C.s and Councillors that they were to come in to Kairuku with me. Arranged for carriers for next day to go to PINAPAKA.

Wednesday 19 May 43.

Instructed V.C.s that they were to follow me in to KAIRUKU and were to report to District Officer on Saturday. In the meantime they were to arrest as many deserters as possible. Walked to PINAPAKA. No deserters in this village. Arranged for canoes to return to KAIRUKU next morning.

Thursday 20 May 43.

Left PINAPAKA by canoe and arrived at Kairuku station at 1130 hrs.

GENERAL

Nearly all these villages have houses which require repairs or rebuilding and roads which require cleaning. As there are no able bodied men in villages and the women are required for cutting rice no orders were given for repairs or re-building.

*J. B. Price*

W.O.II

P.O. Lakemau District - Kairuku Station.

*Handwritten notes:*  
Kellu  
1/15

DS.

301 3 129

1942/3

P/R No.

STATION :- KAIRUKU.

DISTRICT :- LAKEKAMU

AREA PATROLLED :- KAIRUKU - WAIMA - TERAPU

7 RETURN

PATROL OFFICER :- WO J.B. PRICE.

DATE :- 22 MAY / 6 JUN 1943.



REPORT ON PATROL BY W/O J. B. PRICE  
FROM WAIMA TO TERAPO FOR THE PURPOSE  
OF ARRESTING DESERTERS FROM KANOSIA  
PLANTATION AND FROM BULLDOG AREA.

Lakekamu District  
Kairuku.

7 Jun 43.

Saturday 22 May

Left station at KAIRUKU by canoe and arrived at WAIMA where ten petrol drums, washed up on the beach, were back-loaded on canoes for Kairuku. A/Cs sent to ABIARA, KEVORI and BEREINA to pick up any deserters in those villages. Stayed night at Waima.

Sunday 23 May

A/C reported back. At ABIARA reported no deserters in village. One deserter brought in from KIVORI. One deserter brought in from BEREINA together with Councillor - A/C reported that he saw a group of boys in the bush who ran away from him and he caught one only. Sent Councillor back to BEREINA with two A/Cs. Two boys brought in from WEIMA villages both having Medical exemption certificates. A/Cs reported in back from BEREINA that they could find no boys in the village.

Monday 24 May

Walked to OIAPU. Took 8 prisoners from these villages, deserters from Bulldog, and found there were 4 more in the bush. During the day three prisoners escaped complete with handcuffs. During night four further deserters taken.

Tuesday 25 May

Walked to IOKEA. Took 22 prisoners here - 18 deserters from Bulldog and 4 from Kanosia and Hisiu. Stayed night at IOKEA.

Wednesday 26 May

Interviewed V.C. and ex-V.C. from Iokea and told them they were to go in to station and see the D.O. (Recommended that the present V.C. be retained and that ex V.C. be kept away from village, signed on if possible, as he was a trouble-maker). Interviewed V.C. and Councillors from BIARU - they stated that village boys who had run away from Kanosia had not returned to village and had probably gone in to Moresby. Two A/Cs returned to KAIRUKU with 4 Kanosia deserters.

Thursday 27 May

L.M.S. Missionary advised that he had had to close hospital to in-patients as he was unable to get food to feed them. Walked to LESE. No deserters in this village.

Friday 28 May

Walked to LALAPIPI and found ANGAU station there in charge of Sgt Hayes. Arranged to send deserters up to TERAPO by barge - 14 boys I had brought from Kairuku with me and 30 boys I had taken en route. Stayed night at LALAPIPI.

Saturday 29 May

Travelled up to TERAPO by barge. W/O Amoores advised all boys had arrived safely and had been sent by him up to BULLDOG. I asked him if he could supply list of names of boys who had deserted from Bulldog but he said he could not. Returned to LALAPIPI.

Sunday 30 May

Stayed at LALAPIPI

Monday 31 May

M.V. Taroona arrived and proceeded direct to Terapo. Went up river by barge to try and arrange passage back to Kairuku but found vessel not returning. No advice of any other boat arriving. Returned to LALAPIPI.

Tuesday 1 June

Heard another boat due in that day and arranged to wait till next day. During day heard that several of the IOKEA boys I had sent to Terapo had run away on their way to Bulldog and I decided to walk back and endeavour to pick up these boys on the way.

Wednesday 2 June

Walked to BIARU. No deserters in village. Stayed night.

Thursday 3 June

Walked to OIAPU. Stopped at IOKEA on the way and picked up 6 of the boys who had run away.

Friday 4 June

Had slight attack of fever and stayed at OIAPU.

Saturday 5 June

Walked to WAIMA and tried to arrange for canoes for next morning to go to KAIRUKU.

Sunday 6 June

Sea too rough for canoes. Walked to PINAPAKA and went by canoe from there to KAIRUKU.

GENERAL

ADMS

N.L.

Both on this and previous patrols I picked up several boys who were listed as deserters. I found however that they had Medical exemption certificates but apparently no action had been taken by Medical assistants to have the boys contracts noted or cancelled or for them to be paid off. As the boys had been listed as deserters by the plantations apparently the plantations were not notified that the boys were medically unfit. The position is very unsatisfactory.

*John*  
*[Signature]*  
*for [unclear] (2)*  
*15/6/43*

*J B Price*

W.O.II  
P/O Kairuku, Lakekamu District



GDM/C.

DS 2/3/1181.

HQ  
ANGAU  
19 Jun 43.

DO  
KAIRUKU.

Patrol Report dated 7 Jun 43 by W/O 11 Price, J.B.  
- Waimea to Terape (22 May to 6 Jun 43).

The receipt is acknowledged of the abovementioned  
report, under cover of your memo 428 of 7 Jun 43.

  
Major  
A.P.S.

DS 30/3/1

P/R No. 1/43-44.

STATION:- ~~LAKKAMU~~ KAIRUKU

DISTRICT:- LAKKAMU.

AREA PATROLLED:- LABAPIPI → KEREMA

PATROL OFFICER:- SGT HAYES, B.B.

DATE:- 6/11 JUN 43.

S/R  
315



25 2/3

BULLDOG SUB-DISTRICT.

THE A.D.O.,  
Lieut., Rich.

No 1 of 1943/44 Lak

PATROL FROM LALAPIPI TO KEREMA FOR THE PURPOSE OF APPREHENDING  
DESSERTERS AND CONVEYING AN AMOUNT OF CASH TO THE A.D.O., KEREMA.

SPT.	HAYES	P.O.
CPL.	HANTOCK	N.L.O.
A/C SPT.	HANTO	
A/C	JUGANI	
A/C	KENIA	

SUNDAY JUNE 6th. Left LALAPIPI at 0900 by canoe for MOTUMOTU arriving there at 1000, where V.C. PUKARI handed over three deserters from the Bulldog L. of G. - Obtained fourteen carriers from MOTUMOTU and proceeded along the beach to KUKIPI, arriving there at 1200 hours. V.C. KARUKURU handed over one deserter. On the beach outside the KUKIPI village of Americans were salvaging a bomber - a complaint was laid by the V. C. to the effect that the Kukiipi boys were not being paid for working at the plane, and therefore had ceased helping the Americans - I informed him of his error in allowing the work to cease, and instructed that the boys were to go ahead with the work, and would be paid by A.N.S.A.U. - we continued on to HAMUHAMU per A.W.T., launch (Lt. Hugo) arriving there at 1430 hours - V. C. METANENA informed us that no boys from his village, or that of the next LILIFI A.S., had come through - At KOARU, however, he stated that three had been reported. Left HAMUHAMU at 1445 and travelled per canoe to LILIFI where V.C. MATA-AINA informed us that there were no deserters. Proceeded per beach out to KOARU, where the V.C. WAKE handed over three boys, and at the same time reporting another at ARU. Arrived KOARU 1610

MONDAY JUNE 7th. Left KOARU with fourteen carriers at 0600, and walking along the beach passed IRAVA at 0820 - sent Sgt., into village but received no deserters - arrived URU at 0945, and ARU at 0945. At the latter place one deserter was apprehended. Arrived KARAVA at 1015, crossed river per canoe and proceeded along the beach to BUFA-A (1115). No deserters here. Along the beach again arriving WOMAI No.2 at 1140. Crossed creek per canoe, along the beach to WOMAI No. 1 arriving at 1200. Still no deserters. Proceeded along the beach to SIHA (1220) and TIREVA (1315). No deserters in these villages. Arrived Cape Cupola at 1340 - left beach here at 1600 and went inland and up a steep hill - proceeded along the ridge to Kerema arriving at 1915. - Heavy rain and much mud along the last stages into Kerema.

TUESDAY JUNE 8th. Handed Cash to Capt. Ormsby A.D.O. KEREMA Interrogated deserters with view to ascertaining whether any more had gone through by the inland track. They did not know.

WEDNESDAY JUNE 9th. Left KEREMA at 0800 arriving at Cape Cupola at 1115 - Left at 1300, arriving TIREVA at 1325. Along beach to KIRIX SIHA (1420), WOMAI No.1 (1440), Canoeed to WOMAI No. 2 (1500). No further deserters apprehended.

THURSDAY JUNE 10th. Obtained six carriers from WOMAI and proceeded along beach to BUFA-A (0845) - went on to KARAVA (0915), canoeed to the village (1015) and then along the beach to ARU (1045) Then to URU (1050), and IRAVA (1210), and KOARU (1230) - Still no more deserters. Left KOARU (1350) and proceeded along bush track to LILIFI (1425) where we apprehended two deserters. Canoeed to HAMUHAMU where we arrived at 1530. No deserters at the latter village.

P/A  
19

G. W. D.

Copy for A.D.O.  
17/7

WD 11/13  
Return 55 11/17

PATROL FROM LALAPIPI TO KEREMA FOR THE PURPOSE OF APPREHENDING  
DESSERTERS, AND CONVERTING AN AMOUNT OF CASH TO T.S.A.D.O. KEREMA.

Sheet 2.

FRIDAY 11th JUNE. Canoeed from HAHUNAMU (0800) to KUKIPI (0920)  
One more deserter at the latter village. Proceeded along the beach  
to NOTUMOTH (1120), obtaining another deserter, and then on to  
LALAPIPI arriving at 1200. Twelve deserters altogether  
apprehended.

The morale of the natives in this area is particularly good - they have strong views on the war, and our enemy - They fully realise that the desertions from Bulldog were not at all helpful to the allied cause, and gave every help, and no trouble, to the patrol on the score of apprehending the runaways. All Village Constables along this route have reported a total of <sup>14</sup> disputes, quarrels, etc., in their villages.

NOTUMOTH, KUKIPI, LILIFINI, KOARU and KARAVA villages are in excellent condition. NOTUMOTH rest house is slightly delapidated and instructions were issued for its renovation. In all other villages mentioned in this report the houses were badly in need of repair. On questioning the V.C.'s on the score of the bad condition of the villages, their general reply was that most of the men had gone to Bulldog, and that there were only old men and women and children left. LILIFINI particularly deserves mention for the cleanliness and general order of the village. The houses, especially the rest house, are in excellent condition, and a new fence with a wing gates has recently been constructed around the village. The V.C. MAITA-ISA is respectful and intelligent, and has a good knowledge of the track to Kerema, being very helpful to the patrol with particulars of walking times between villages, location of rest houses, etc.

The three members of the R.P.C., behaved very well during the patrol, the Sgt., MAITO being of value owing to his intimate knowledge of the tracks, villages, water places etc. A.C.'s JUMARI and KENIA carried out their instructions in an efficient manner, and gave no cause whatsoever for complaint.

From questioning of the V.C.'s and village peoples I am quite satisfied that there were no more deserters to be apprehended along this portion of the coast between LALAPIPI and KEREMA. It is possible, of course, that some may have been returning to the villages via bush tracks, while the patrol was coming back to LALAPIPI - However all V.C.'s and Councillors have been instructed to apprehend any further deserters and bring same to the nearest Government station. The village peoples have been warned against assisting runaways in any manner whatsoever.

The ~~main~~ part of the journey between LALAPIPI and CAPE CUPOLA was very easy walking and canoe travel. From Cape Cupola into Kerema there are rather steep climbs and a slippery track, and although not difficult, is the hardest part of the patrol.

*H. Hayes*

Sgt. Hayes B. B. P. O.,

A. N. C. A. U.

PATROL NUMBER ONE.



DS 30/3/3

P/R No. 2/43-44.

STATION:- KAIRUKU

DISTRICT:- LAKEKAMU.

AREA PATROLLED:- MEKEO DISTRICT + WAIMA

VILLAGES.

PATROL OFFICER:- WOII PRICE, J.B.

DATE:- 11/21 JUN 43.

1/2  
3/5

Duplicate

28 JUN 1945

DS 386

Keeleku No. 2 of 1943

82 1/3

REPORT OF PATROL by W.O.II J. B. Price to MEEGO District and WAIMA villages

Date left station 11 Jun 45 Date returned 21 Jun 45

- Purposes of Patrol:
1. To arrest deserters from BULLDOG area;
  2. To arrest prisoners escaped from MORSEBY;
  3. To inspect and report on rice areas in MEEGO;
  4. To arrest KAWOGIA deserters at WAIMA.

Patrol accompanied by: R.P.C. 9  
Carriers 16 prisoners

Last patrol to area made by District Services Field Staff in May 45.

Friday 11 Jun 45

Left station by canoe at 0900 hrs and travelled up river to BIOTO; arrived there at 1700 hrs. Enquiries showed no deserters in village and that no deserters from BULLDOG had been travelling through the village on their way home. Stayed at BIOTO for the night.

Saturday 12 Jun 45

Walked to INAWAI-A. Visited Rice Mill and left mail and other stores with them. Left mail at Mission. Interviewed V.C.s from EBOA and INAWAI-A. No rice at EBOA and made arrangements to inspect rice garden at INAWAI-A the following day. Stayed night in village.

Sunday 13 Jun 45.

Walked out to garden and inspected Rice crop and saw the bagged rice in the village. Two A/Cs sent back to station in charge of prisoners I had been using as carriers. Saw V.C. from IESUBAIHUA and found that no rice in that village. Made arrangements for carriers for following morning to go to RARAI.

Monday 14 Jun 45

Walked to RARAI. Inspected rice gardens and bagged rice at GRIRO BEYANA BEENO and RARAI. All these villages say no deserters from BULLDOG had lately come to villages and no boys from other villages passed through. Stayed night at RARAI.

Tuesday 15 Jun 45.

Walked to INAWAINI with two A/Cs. Inspected rice there and returned to RARAI. Stayed night in village.

Wednesday 16 Jun 45.

Walked to BEIPASA. Inspected rice and garden at ABEAD. One deserter in this village but too sick to travel and left instructions with V.C. to bring him in to station when recovered. Inspected rice and garden at BEIPA'A. One deserter, a boss-boy from Bulldog, brought in from AIPEANA by A/C but no sign of prisoners there. Interviewed V.C. from AIPEANA and arranged to inspect garden following day. Stayed night at BEIPA'A.

Thursday 17 Jun 45.

Walked to AIPEANA and inspected rice and garden. Walked to INAWI and inspected gardens there. Stayed night at INAWI. Arranged for carriers for following day to go to BEHEINA.

Friday 18 Jun 45.

Walked to BEHEINA. Inspected rice garden and rice at INAWAI. Two A/Cs are in charge of clearing operations at plantation at

G(III) 1  
W.D.  
3/5

Replied to



Stayed night at BEREINA. Arranged for carriers to go to WAIMA next day.

Saturday 19 Jun 45.

Walked to WAIMA. Interviewed V.C.s and Councillors and told no deserters from KAWOSIA had returned to village. A/Cs sent out to search villages and gardens to no trace of deserters found. Stayed night at Waima.

Sunday 20 Jun 45.

Difficulty in getting enough carriers in these villages and departure delayed. A/Cs had to be sent out to the villages before enough boys obtained. Walked to PINUPAKA. Stayed night at village and arranged for canoes next morning to return to station.

Monday 21 Jun 45.

Returned to station by canoe from PINUPAKA.

Deserters from BULLDOG area

NL

My instructions were that a very large number of boys from this area had run away consequent upon the bombing. I could find no trace of these deserters in any of the MEKEO villages and no talk among the natives of the boys having run away (apart from the two mentioned previously). Either the boys reported as having run away have returned to BULLDOG or they are still living in the area and have not yet reached their villages.

Three prisoners escaped from MORESBY.

C.O.  
RPC.

*l. Moresby*

An A/C from Moresby was sent to apprehend these prisoners but could find no trace of them. I interviewed the V.C.s from their respective villages but they all claimed having no knowledge of the men. The A/C, as instructed, was left at his village for a spell and if these prisoners arrive during his stay there he will apprehend them.

RICE in MEKEO villages and gardens.

HQ

O

Estimated total  
120 tons

- BIOTO - NO rice.
- MEOA - NO rice left. Early plantings all destroyed by rats etc.
- INAWAI-A - Further large area now ready to cut and instructions given to begin cutting on Monday 14 Jun. Cutting should be completed in about two weeks. Bagging of rice already cut not yet completed. 12 bags in village.
- IE HUAIBUA - NO rice left. Early plantings all destroyed.
- ORIRO METANE - All rice now cut and bagged. 48 bags.
- BIBBO - Rice cutting still proceeding and should be complete in two weeks except for small area green rice. 85 bags filled.
- RARAI - Rice still being cut with fair area still to be cut. Small area of young rice. 100 bags filled.
- INAWAINI - Cutting finished except for small area green rice. Bagging not yet complete. 88 bags filled.
- AMO AMO - Cutting finished except for small area. Large area young rice coming on. 97 bags filled.
- BAIPA'A - Cutting ripe rice finished. Very large area not yet ready to cut. 236 bags filled.
- AIPEANA - Rice now being cut and large area remains to be cut. Cutting should be finished in about three weeks. Large amount of cut rice stored in village but none yet bagged.

INAWI - Ripe rice finished but large area young rice not yet ready to cut. 118 bags filled.

INAWAI - All rice cut, but area small and results poor. Bagging not quite complete. 13 bags filled.

N.B. Rice cut and bagged refers to paddy rice - not yet milled. Bags are large copra sacks and would hold approx 150 lbs rice.

WAIWA boys deserted from KANOSLA

There is no trace of these deserters in their villages. They are either still on their way home and not yet reached their villages or they have gone to MORSEBY where so many previous deserters from KANOSLA have gone.

N.L.

*J. B. Price*

P/O  
Lakemba District, Kairua.



DS 30/3/2

P/R No. 2/43-44.

STATION:- Kairaku

DISTRICT:- Lakekamu.

AREA PATROLLED:- Terapo & coastal districts

PATROL OFFICER:- Lt. C. H. Rich.

DATE:- 3/14 Jun 43.

REPORT OF A PATROL TO TERAPO AND COASTAL DISTRICTS BYCLEM. H. RICH A.D.O.Objects of Patrol.

- (1) Apprehending Deserters - result of Enemy Raid.
- (2) General Duties.

Thursday 3 June 43.

As a result of yesterday's raid almost the entire labour line, including hospital patients from the Bulldog area, approximately 350 having deserted I have decided to make a patrol to Terapo and if necessary further afield and endeavour to collect and return as many as possible. W/O Moore at Terapo has been advised by radio and instructed to hold all natives endeavouring to pass that point. Having received word from Sgt Bonning of the 14th Field Company, that he was holding some 120 natives, W.O. Marlay together with 2 A.C.'s was instructed to proceed by road to Otomai and take charge. A barge being placed at my disposal at 1700 hours I proceeded downstream accompanied by Cpl Hancock, Spr Clegg and 3 A.C.'s. Arrived at Otomai 2000 hours where W.O. Marlay reported and stated there were 143 natives at this point. Mounted a police guard.

Friday 4 June 43.

After lining the natives and explaining as best I could the present circumstances, and giving a general pep talk and advice as regards the method of taking cover in any subsequent raids, ferried them all across the river and with W.C. Marlay in charge instructed them to return to Bulldog, where temporary accommodation will be made in the bush. The site recently occupied by the labour line being far too obvious from the air. I should here like to express on behalf of ANGAU the excellent work done by Sgt Bonning, firstly in being able to hold these natives without violence, and secondly for attending to their needs as regards food, accommodation, and medical assistance to ex hospital patients and also 3 wounded natives who managed to reach this point. This N.C.O. showed great tact and sympathy. Having seen W.O. Marlay safely on his journey we continued on downstream, noticed several abandoned rafts on the bank, undoubtedly belonging to natives who had substituted them for canoes they had stolen from the de-snagging parties. Called at Grimm Point where we located 1 deserter

G. W. D. 1/16



(2)

Friday 4 June '43 cont:-

deserter, as there was a barge going upstream he was placed aboard and instructed to report to W.O. Still. Leaving Grimm Point called at KOVU Sgt Banfield (ANGAU) reported and stated he had 9 deserters, he stated quite a number had ignored his instructions and continued on downstream. Here again we were fortunate in meeting a barge going upstream, the 9 deserters were placed aboard in charge of a boss boy and returned to Dull dog. Leaving KOVU we proceeded downstream and after 2 hours travelling pulled in to the bank where I put 2 A.C's ashore with instructions to use the back track to POPO collect any deserters they found and meet me at the mouth of the Kapuri. Continuing on we passed two barges loaded with deserters, apparently W.O. Amore has been on the job with a marked degree of success. Arrived at Terapo 1700 hrs, W.O. Amore reported and advised having returned 49 deserters. Camped at Terapo.

Saturday 5 June '43.

Having arranged for a small launch I proceeded to NOVIAMI village where two deserters were arrested and the sum of £4 paid out to relations of boys away working on the line. V.O. JACK reported only two deserters had arrived in the village the other NOVIAMI natives having been turned back at Terapo by W.O. Amore. Interviewed EPE's parents, EPE was one of the lads killed in the raid, the father was very distracted and refused food he is however being attended to by the Rev Brown. I comforted him as much as possible and explained that in times like this such news was more or less to be expected. A most difficult thing for the natives to realise, especially as all their former experiences with Europeans were of a friendly nature and a serious view taken of unlawful killings. Leaving NOVIAMI we returned to the LAKEKAMU and proceeded to the mouth going ashore at LALAPIPI where Sgt MAYES (ANGAU) reported. Sgt Mayes is at present in charge of the natives who are employed by the 1 Aust Water Transport Coy. During the evening discussed the evacuation of the MIRIVASI site, this area has been taken over by the Military. A separate report on the matter has been forwarded to the D.O. With the arrival of troops and the erection of workshops on the opposite side of the river I am of the opinion that the people of LALAPIPI village are in a dangerous area and accordingly have suggested they move to a site some 3 miles East from their present location. A report on this matter has also

Saturday 5 June 43 cont:-

also been forwarded to the D.O. seeking approval of my action.

Sunday 6 June 43.

Instructed Sgt Hayes and Cpl Hancock with 2 A.C.'s to proceed to Kerema and apprehend any deserters they came across. I also took this opportunity of forwarding to the A.D.O. Kerema the sum of £660 pounds. This amount represents cash handed back to me by labourers who were paid on my recent patrol to Wau. It is their wish that it be paid to their relations, and being of the opinion it would make the labour more contented I agreed to their request and the money goes forward for distribution to those nominated. I also have approximately £100 for distribution at villages I intend visiting. Self accompanied by Spr Clegg and 2 A.C.'s proceeded East en route to OIAPU. The tide being low we had a most enjoyable walk along the beach and arriving at LESE made camp for the night. V.C. reported with 2 deserters. Late in the evening the 2 A.C.'s who were sent via POPO reported and had with them 3 deserters. Received urgent and important mail from the D.O. this was attended to immediately and despatched per A.C. IRIRI with instructions to make all haste to KAIRUKU.

Monday 7 June 43.

Leaving LESE walked along the beach to IOKEA where 15 deserters were apprehended and the sum of £5 paid out to relations. It is rumoured that there are still a few deserters hiding in the bush. Instructed the Police to search the vicinity. At dusk the Police reported no success. Camped the night at IOKEA.

Tuesday 8 June 43.

Instructed the V.C. and Councillors to continue the search while I decided to push on to OIAPU arriving at that point 1200 hours. Here again we found 2 deserters. Most of the men from this village are employed on the Wau end of the road so actually had no reason for desertion. The sum of £49 was paid out to those entitled.

Wednesday 9 June 43.

Assembled all the villagers and gave a lengthy harangue in which I explained the necessity of close co-operation in all respects, emphasising the disastrous results of ~~the~~<sup>a</sup> break down in the supply line. The crime of harbouring run-aways was also emphatically stressed. Leaving OIAPU returned to IOKEA where the V.C. reported no sign of HARIA and the 3 other



(4)

Wednesday 9 June<sup>1943</sup> cont:-

others who deserted some three weeks ago. At approximately 2300 hours the Police and myself visited the houses of the 'wanted' men and were fortunate in effecting their arrests. HARIA alone showed signs of resistance but was soon overpowered. These men deserted prior to the raid so, in actual fact had no reasonable grounds for their act.

Thursday 10 June<sup>1943</sup>.

Here again the entire population were assembled at the Rest House and subjected to a lengthy speech during which the seriousness of the present position was carefully explained. Propaganda photos received from Headquarters were used for demonstration purposes, and advice as to the best methods of taking cover, should the occasion ever arise, was also given. Leaving IOKEA we proceeded to MIARU where the people were again assembled and informed of current events. 3 Deserters apprehended. V.O. reports quite a number of able-bodied men are at APINAPI village so have decided to send the Opl along with a view to recruiting them for work on the line. Leaving MIARU we continued on to LESE and made camp for the night.

Friday 11 June<sup>1943</sup>.

Received word from D.O. Kairuku that 39 deserters from the Kairuku Dist were on their way so have decided to await their arrival. Opl reported from APINAPI with 8 very likely looking lads.

Saturday 12 June<sup>1943</sup>.

Police and deserters arrived from Kairuku at approximately 1100 hours so moved off to LALAPIPI. Total deserters including those from Kairuku and the 8 new recruits now total 120. While at LALAPIPI Sgt Hayes and Cpl Hancock reported having completed their patrol to Kerema, they were not so fortunate and only managed to collect 12 natives. I am of the opinion that the GOARIBARI and KORIKI natives are using the back track so have decided to get in touch with the D.O. Delta by radio. As a large barge is proceeding upstream to TERAPO have decided to take advantage of this opportunity and move the party upstream. Arrived TERAPO 1800 hrs. During the evening discussed matters with W.O. Amore and also arranged for transport upstream. W.O. Amore advised having returned 145 natives during my absence, excellent work.

(5)

Sunday 13 June 1943.

Sending 2 small barges on ahead, self after finalising matters with W.O. Moore left in the third barge at 1000 hours and arrived at KOVU 1530 hrs, where I met Capt Healy A.D.C. Kerema who was on his way downstream. Discussed various official matters after which he continued on downstream while I remained at KOVU. During the evening discussed matters with Sgt Barfield. As the ration position is now well in hand I have decided to close down the <sup>Sago</sup> KMM making at this point, the women will be paid wages due while the men folk who are mainly "B" class will be used for building stores etc., which are urgently needed in the Bulldog area.

Monday 14 June 1943.

Leaving KOVU 0630 we had the misfortune to experience engine trouble, and what with the low state of the river did not arrive at Bulldog until 1500 hrs.

.....Lieut  
O.C. Angau Bulldog L of C.

GENERAL REMARKS.

I should like to mention that no punishment whatsoever was inflicted on any of the natives who ran away as a result of the raid. Except perhaps in one or two cases it was their first experience in the horrors of war as practised by Europeans. The damage done and casualties inflicted in the raid are by no means a true indication/vicious nature of the attack, which was confined to a very small area. The rattle of machine gun fire and crash of bombs at such close quarters are sufficient to demoralise most people so it can be readily understood why the natives who are ignorant to these things, obeyed their natural instincts and fled. No ~~exceptional~~ difficulty was experienced in persuading them to return to duty, and having now experienced a raid I am confident that future raids will not have the same disastrous results.

.....Lieut



DS 30/3/4

P/R No. 3/43-44.

STATION:- KAIRUKU.

DISTRICT:- LAKEKAMU

AREA PATROLLED:- LALAPIPI - MAIPA

PATROL OFFICER:- SGT HAYES, B.B.

DATE:- 15/21 JUN 43.

5/12  
8/15

BULLDOG DISTRICT

25 7/3  
No 3 of 1943/44  
LAK

Lt. Rich,  
A. D. O. BULLDOG.

PATROL FROM TALAPIPI TO MAIPA FOR THE PURPOSES OF RECRUITING FOR THE BULLDOG L. OF C., AND APPREHENSION OF DESERTERS.

SGT. HAYES P.O.  
A.C. I/Cpl OROROGA  
A.C. KEMIA

TUESDAY JUNE 15th. At 0815 hours apprehended fourteen deserters at this station and sent them to TERAPO per Cpl., Hancock for transshipment to BULLDOG. Left TALAPIPI at 1030 with fourteen carriers and proceeded along beach to PAIHO, a new village composed of MIRIVASE evacuees. Crossed the RAINO creek at 1000 by canoe and continued along the beach to KAPURI (1030). Crossed the river by the ferrymans canoe and walked along the beach to ILAVA, a small village, the former inhabitants of which had been evacuated to LESE at the order of P.O. PRICE of KAIRUKU - arrived ILAVA at 1140 hours - so far no deserters. From here a ferrymans canoe was obtained and the patrol moved per this vessel to LESE (1325). At this village the V.C. GASHAYA handed over two Bulldog deserters - The village was very clean and in excellent condition. Left LESE at 1530 and proceeded along the beach to BIARU (1630), where it was found that councillors LAEPA of LESE and MAIAMAI-IRI of BIARU were engaged in a land dispute. Both claimed the land, and as I was ignorant of the previous terms of settlement, instructed both to go to Kairuku and have the matter settled. At 1800 hours the V.C. BOBORI and one councillor of APONAIPI arrived with two deserters from the Bulldog area. Inspected BIARU and found it clean and in good condition. V.C. FEAE controls this village.

WEDNESDAY JUNE 16th. Left BIARU at 0830 and proceeded per canoe up the BIARU river to APONAIPI arriving there at 1530. V.C. BOBORI assembled the village people, from whom one lad was recruited. The village was clean and tidy, and the rest house in excellent condition. One village house was in bad condition, and instructions were issued for its renovation. During the night the two LESE boys again deserted. Instructed the V.C. of LESE, who had come up river with us to apprehend the boys on his return to the village.

THURSDAY JUNE 17th. Left APONAIPI at 0900 and proceeded per canoe to BIMA (1500) Village dirty, and the rest house and barracks in bad condition. Recruited two boys. V.C. and councillors away at GOILALA. Gave instructions for the renovation of the rest house and the barracks and the cleaning of the village. Went on to AMEIAKA arriving there at 1640. V.C. AME-PIAUNA assembled the people - seven recruits were obtained from here. This V.C. seems very enthusiastic about his work, and did everything in his power to help the patrol. He has his people well under control.

FRIDAY JUNE 18th. Left AMEIAKA at 1110 and returned back along the river to BIMA from where the patrol proceeded along a bush pad to INAKINA. The pad was very muddy, and at several places creeks had to be forded. Arrived at this village 1330 hours. V.C. and councillors away at Gollala. Village and barracks clean and in good order. Recruited four boys from here. Left 1530 and walked along bush pad to MAIPA 1700. Road in bad condition, soft and muddy. Two creeks to be forded. V.C. APEAY controls this village and MOI - village and rest house very clean and tidy.

SATURDAY JUNE 19th. Left MAIPA 0830 for BOI along bush track which

PIA  
19

ADMS. Renukumate para 16  
RAC. Iwae para 17  
A.A.M.C.I.  
5 JUL 1943



PATROL FROM LALAPIPI TO MAIPA FOR THE PURPOSE OF RECRUITING FOR THE BULLDOG L. OF C., AND THE APPREHENSION OF DESERTERS.

Sheet 2.

was in good condition. Several creeks to be forded. Arrived EOI at 1000. Village, rest house and barracks clean and in good condition. Nor recruits and or deserters. Returned to MAIPA where EGEFA V.C. and fourteen recruits were awaiting my arrival. Rejected three on medical grounds.

SUNDAY JUNE 20th. Assembled MAIPA people and recruited four. left MAIPA at 0930 and canoed down river to APONAIPI where three more natives were recruited. Proceeded onto BIARU arriving there at 1930. Seventeen Bulldog deserters handed over by the V.C. FRAE.

MONDAY JUNE 21st. Left BIARU at 0830 and proceeded along the beach to LESE where the two deserters who had run away twice were apprehended. Arrived LESE at 0930. Obtained canoes here and proceeded to ILAVA from where the patrol walked to KAPURI. Crossed the river and proceeded to PAHO, again crossing a creek and arrived at LALAPIPI at 1545. At 1640 the V.C. PUKARI of MOTUKOTU reported in with nine Bulldog deserters.

The natives encountered on this patrol seem to have a particularly good grip of the war situation on the score of native carriers - I had no trouble at all in recruiting the boys in the APONAIPI MAIPA areas. In fact ten came in from EGEFA to volunteer for work on the L. of C. I did not visit this village - The natives were very helpful to the patrol, especially in giving information which led to the apprehension of deserters.

There was a lack of crimes and trouble in the villages and everything along this route is working smoothly, with the exception of the land dispute between BIARU and LESE, as mentioned previously in this report.

The V.C.'s and councillors of all villages were of much value with information regarding tracks, walking times, food and water supplies. V.C. AHE-PINAUNA of AHEIAKA is a very enthusiastic official, and although in the midst of constructing a new village, gave every moment of his time to the needs of the patrol. He came onto INAUKINA and MAIPA to guide over the tracks, and short ~~tra~~ cuts, and gave much valuable information re the numbers of possible recruits in each village encountered. All villages were in good condition, and clean, with the exception of BINA, which village has ~~ka~~ most of its peoples and councillors at Gollala. The water supply in all cases, with the exceptions of EOI and INAUKINA is from the rivers. The two villages in question have very small streams flowing by the houses.

At MAIPA, EOI, INAUKINA and APONAIPI there is a prevalence of sores, ulcers, sapoma etc., A medical <sup>aid</sup> such needed through these areas.

The two members of the R.P.C., behaved extremely well and I have no complaints whatsoever on this account.

Sgt. Hayes B. B., P. O.

A. N. G. A. U.

ADMS

RPE

6/21/43

*Hayes*

DS 30/3/5

P/R No. 4/43-44.

STATION:- KAIRUKU.

DISTRICT:- LAKEKAMU.

AREA PATROLLED:- COILALA AREA & RETURN

PATROL OFFICER:- CPL SCOTT, NA.

DATE:- 30 APR/5 JUL 43

5/2  
3/5



Patrol Report No 4  
of Lakikama

PATROL REPORT.

No. Kairuku. 1

143/44

Report of Patrol by. Cpl. N.A. SCOTT.

to. 1 st. trip. Gailala P.C. and return to Arapokine.  
2 nd. trip. Gailala P.C. and return to KAIRUKU.

Date left station. 30.4.43. Date returned. 5.7.43.

Purposes of Patrol. To deliver rations and stores to GAILALA P.C.  
Also to organise search parties for missing American  
flier who parachuted in the DEVA DEVA, PANE area.

Patrol accompanied by.

European Personnel.

RPC. (No. only) 1 st. trip. 5.  
2 nd. trip. 6.

Native carriers. (No. only.) 1st. trip. 88.  
2nd. trip. 75.

Previous Patrol Report Ref. for map.

Last Patrol made to area by.

(b).Medical Assistant on. General examination of all villages.

N.A. Scott Cpl.  
Patrol Officer.  
N.A.Scott.

PATROL REPORT.DATE OF COMMENCEMENT OF PATROL. 30.4.43.ROUTE. KAIRUKU TO GOILALA P.O. and RETURN.OBJECT OF PATROL. TO DELIVER STORES AND RATIONS at GOILALA P.O.PATROL OFFICER. H.A. SCOTT.30.4.43.

Accompanied by Capt Teogood, I left KAIRUKU on the launch "ONOA" and proceeded to ARAPOKINE; on arrival at that Station the Stores were unloaded, and leaving Capt Teogood to arrange the stores into loads for the carriers, I left for KUBUNA with a small party of carriers.

Acting on instructions from Capt Teogood I arranged for the loan of the WONOHO MISSION Labour for 1.5.43. to bring a load of stores from ARAPOKINE to KUBUNA, and left an A.C. to be in charge of the party.

1.5.43.

A.C. TOARIBE, who had been sent by the District Officer to recruit carriers, arrived in the midmorning with a party of 19 carriers and two Village Constables, I issued rations and immediately sent them to ARAPOKINE to join my original party of carriers, and dispatched the two V.C.'s. in search of more carriers.

I also sent A.C. IMANGA to try and recruit carriers locally, on his return he reported that the local V.C. had left for KAIRUKU the preceding day and had taken a party of men with him, the only men that remained in the village were unfit for carrying.

The Catholic Mission Station also confirmed a report that all men employed on the aerodrome had returned to KAIRUKU.

A party of 37 WONOHO MISSION Labour arrived in the mid-afternoon with a load of stores.

2.5.43

Carriers returned from ARAPOKINE in the early afternoon, A.C. TOARIBE reported that the Mission truck had brought a load of stores to WONOHO, but that a small quantity still remained in ARAPOKINE.

3.5.43.

I divided the carriers into two parties, one to go to ARAPOKINE and the other to WONOHO, when they were almost to WONOHO they met the WONOHO Labourers, under the instruction of the Father in charge of that Station, bringing the stores left at that Station by the Mission truck, so the entire party proceeded to ARAPOKINE and returned that night with all stores.

During the morning I dispatched A.C. IMANGA and V.C. BOULA of LAIVA to recruit more carriers.

Heavy rain in late afternoon and night.

4.5.43.

All carriers proceeded to ONOBA, A.C. HAVIRA to remain at station in charge of stores, and A.C. TOARIBE to conduct the party to and fro.

W.O.ii. Simpson passed through on his way to KAIRUKU, I returned a sick native with him to that Station.

One of MR. Simpson's party, a carrier, reported to me that he had been informed that A.C. NORNABA, who had been previously sent by the D.O. to recruit carriers, was attending a dance in a village near DAVA DAVA.

5.5.43.

Carriers returned from ONOBA in mid afternoon.

A.C. IMANGA returned with a party of 31 KUNI carriers.

6 LAKERA boys, in charge of V.C. arrived in late afternoon, they had been sent by the D.O. and were instructed to pick up a load of repack some of the stores so as to make fewer loads and proceed to MAPUEN the following day.



BARRACK REPORT.5.5.43. (con't.)

my stores from ARAPONINE, as there were no stores for me at that station, they had taken a load to Mr. WILLIAMS, MEXICO RICE HILL, and then returned to their village to be told that I was in KUBUHA.

6.5.43.

All carriers proceeded to ONOBA, one party are to proceed to OBA OBA tomorrow and return the following day, the remainder of the party are to return here tomorrow. The party going on to OBA OBA are to be under the charge of A.C. TOARICE who will stay at that Station as guard.

Several boys had to be discharged as they were unfit to continue carrying.

I also sent A.C. TIRILU to apprehend A.C. KORNALA.

7.5.43.

A.C. HAVIRA and A.C. KORNALA reported to me in charge of party of carriers returned from ONOBA, A.C. IMANGA was at that Station as guard of the stores, A.C. HAVIRA reported that the other carriers had left for OBA OBA under A.C. TOARICE.

When questioned, A.C. KORNALA replied that he had been at one village while a dance was in progress, but had left the following morning with 10 carriers, and had only stopped in the village over night.

He also reported that he had left instructions in the villages for Native Food to be brought to the Barracks.

8.5.43.

Proceeded to ONOBA with remainder of stores.

Carriers returned from OBA OBA in the late afternoon.

The track is in a bad state of repair, heavy rain has washed away large portions and it is rutted and very slippery, several boys reported to me with sprained ankles and one man with a dislocated shoulder, all caused by falls while negotiating bad places.

9.5.43.

Proceeded to OBA OBA with remainder of stores.

The track is in a bad state of repair, overgrown with grass and trees and is never exposed to the sun, as a result it is very slippery and in places where landslides have carried away portions of the track it is dangerous to negotiate.

I treated several carriers here for sprains, and had to discharge several as being unfit for further carrying on this trip.

Party of Yule Is. natives who had preceded me with stores to GOIMALA P.C. arrived in the Barracks in the late afternoon, they were in rather a bad state as most of them had bad feet and they had no food, I treated several and issued rations to them for two days.

Purchased native food and issued it in lieu of rice.

10.5.43.

This morning I was able to recruit several more carriers, as this placed me in the position that I was able to take all the stores except a small quantity, enough for 14 carriers, I decided to proceed to DEVA DEVA leaving the stores in the charge of the Mission, when at DEVA DEVA I would send one party back to OBA OBA and the rest of the carriers would proceed to MAPULU.

On arrival at DEVA DEVA I purchased Native Food and issued some as part rations, a party of 14 carriers, under A.C. TOARICE was sent back to OBA OBA to bring forward the stores that remained at that station.

I questioned several village people, including V.C. and councillor, about the movements of A.C. KORNALA, they told me that he had stayed one night in a nearby village while a dance was in progress, but he had left the following morning with a party of carriers, he had also left instructions for Native Food to be brought to the barracks.

Late in the afternoon it was reported to me that a party from GOILALA was coming to meet me at MAPULU, and as several of the carriers who had been temporarily unfit were now capable of carrying light loads I decided to repack some of the stores so as to make fewer loads and proceed to MAPULU the following day.

PATROL REPORT.11.5.43.

Repacked some of the stores so as to make fewer loads, and leaving A.C.'s. IMANGA & TIRIMU with rations at DEVA DEVA I made a fast trip to MAFULU and immediately sent a large party of carriers back to DEVA DEVA to hasten the delivery of the stores being brought from OBA OLA, I afterwards made a generous issue of rations to compensate the carriers for the long day they had had.

An A.C. in charge of a party of carriers from GOILALA arrived in MAFULU in the mid-afternoon, the A.C. reported that an A.C. Cpl. was in KONE recruiting more carriers.

12.5.43.

A.C. KOASIA, from KAIRUKU reported to me this morning with mail for myself and GOILALA.

A small party of carriers under KONE V.C. and A.C. DIMI, Kairuku, joined the GOILALA carriers and I sent them on with stores, also all GOILALA mail under the charge of the GOILALA A.C. and the KONE V.C.

A.C. DIMI reported that as there was a big dance being held the A.C. Cpl. was having difficulty in recruiting carriers as all the men had run into the bush, I sent A.C. HAVIRA to contact the Cpl. and told him to announce to the people that if they did not come forward as carriers I would send police to arrest them, and that as a punishment they would have to supply food to the carriers, A.C. HAVIRA and A.C. Cpl. returned in early afternoon with party of 22 carriers.

I then picked the best of my carriers to carry to GOILALA and back to KAIRUKU and sent the others back to their villages, I took a record of their services for future payment.

13.5.43.

Proceeded to KONE with the remainder of the stores.

Track very rough and broken away, and in places is completely overgrown except for a narrow rutted track, the ruts being full of mud and very slippery.

Purchased Native Food and issued same in lieu of rations.

14.5.43.

Proceeded to IWANI, there is no made track to this village and the existing track is an example of a native track at it's worst, in places the climb is almost perpendicular for a thousand feet or more, and the entire distance is slippery, rutted, covered with obstructions and continually covered with running water from the constant rain.

At IWANI I was able to purchase native food, and issued same as part rations.

15.5.43.

Several boys deserted and I sent the police to apprehend them.

While the police were away I dispatched the remaining carriers to GOILALA P.C. with stores under the charge of A.C. HAVIRA, and KONE V.C.

When the police returned with the deserters who had gone to a nearby village I warned them that they would have to carry for me back to KAIRUKU, and that if they deserted again they would be severely punished, I then proceeded to GOILALA.

16.5.43.

S.C. JACKS and I checked over the stores and found them to be all present and correct, I then loaded them over to him to be forwarded to their final destinations.

As the Signallers at this Station had not received any rice for issue to their native labour I handed over 100 lbs. from my rations and received receipt for same.

On receiving advice from Mr. Jacke that three of my party of police were to remain at GOILALA P.C., I handed A.C.'s. IMANGA, HAVIRA and TIRIMU over to his command.



PATROL REPORT.17.5.43.

This morning, on invitation from Mr. Jacka, I accompanied him on his inspection of the gardens, barracks etc., and was very much impressed with the air of general efficiency that pervades the entire station.

Mr. Jacka is to be particularly recommended for the magnificent garden, which, in a few months, will make the station almost self-supporting as far as Native Nations are concerned. The garden area is roughly 200yds. by 400yds. and is planted for the greater part of that area under potatoes, peas and other vegetables; the remaining area is almost cleared and will be ready for planting within a few weeks.

Made arrangements to start the return trip tomorrow morning.

18.5.43.

A wireless message from the D.O. KAIRUWU received early this morning instructing me to recruit 100 carriers and take them to BIOTO where further stores await transportation to GOLLALA P.C., made no delay in start until tomorrow, and during the day I arranged for the loan of several A.C.'s. from Mr. Jacka, and on his advice made preparations which will greatly facilitate the recruiting of the carriers.

As my need was now greater than theirs, I asked the Sigs. if they would return the bag of rice I had issued to them on the 16.5.43., a favour in which they were only too willing to oblige, I returned to them the receipt they had given me on receiving the issue.

19.5.43.

Proceeded to KIRAKI with party of carriers, with my party are three A.Cs. IFO, MACA, AFORI on loan from GOLLALA, P.C.. Recruited a small party from IVARI district.

20.5.43.

Proceeded to TURE with party, I dispatched A.C. MACA to V HGO to recruit carriers and instructed him to bring them to B B where I am bound the following day.

All the men of TURE were absent but due home the following day so I instructed A.C. AFORI to stop in this village and to collect the men as they came home and to take them to KIRAKI, collecting other carriers at the villages en route.

Purchased small quantity of rice.

21.5.43.

Whilst visiting the DOME P.C. DISTRICT, I was met by V.C. UENVI, of TURE, who told me that a murder had been committed in his village the night before; I decided to visit the village, after some very heavy walking over rough steep country finally reached my destination I first examined the house under which the murder had taken place, and by the quantity of blood easily established the death spot, an examination of the body proved that death had been caused by an axe blow on the right hand side of the body in the region of the kidneys, the axe had entered the body to its full length and breadth, and from the blood and the wound I would assume that death came within a few minutes.

The body was identified as being that of KIRAKI KARI of WIA.

Questions proved that the only witness was KIRAKI KARI, of the same village, so I gave V.C.'s. MACA, KIRAKI instructions to search for him, V.C. IFO I left in the village to carry the load on and to bring the entire village to KIRAKI the following morning for further questioning and to make a report.

At about 1000 hours, whilst I was at the father's house at KIRAKI, a man came up with some news, he said he was the carrier KIRAKI KARI, he had been seen by the father; I arrested him and placed him under the care of A.C. IFO.

A full report of all statements has been submitted to the D.O. KAIRUWU under separate cover.

PATROL REPORT.22.5.43.

Sent a message to A.C.'s KOKIA and OGA telling them I had the murderer in custody, and that they were to spend the day recruiting carriers.

I took statements from SAMUI TAUFA, his wife KARI GAGA, VOVO, wife of the dead man, and ULUVI, brother of the dead man and V. of SIVA..

Kalaria giving me a bad time, but I hope to be able to reach OGA OGA so as to be in a good handy place to handle the carriers and be in touch with Dist. H....

23.5.43.

Left for MAFUU with all party, about an hour and a half from MAFU I became violently sick so decided to spend the night at the Mission Sub-station situated about half way along the road.

My personal gear was left at the mission station while the remainder of the party proceeded to MAFUU.

24.5.43.

Made the short trip to MAFUU, where I immediately went to bed.

A.C. TOARIFA who is also very sick with fever stayed in charge of camp whilst the remainder of the police recruited carriers.

A.C. AKORI reported to me with a party of carriers from KOKIA.

Purchased small quantity of B/F.

25.5.43.

Spent another awful night and barely able to leave bed during the day, I instructed A.C. KOKIA to construct a stretcher to be ready the following day.

Other police, with the exception of A.C. TOARIFA, engaged in recruiting carriers.

Purchased small quantity of native food.

26.5.43.

This morning, I attempted to walk, but on being unable to continue I had to resort to the stretcher and so proceeded in that manner to SIVA SIVA.

Rain in early afternoon stopped the villagers from bringing my large supply of B/F.

27.5.43.

As a walking experiment again called this morning I proceeded to OGA OGA per stretcher, near OGA OGA I obtained information from a native that a plane had crashed on Monday night, one member of the crew was still at OGA OGA but the rest were missing.

I immediately sent A.C. ITC to raise the village people into search parties, and as the native claimed that he knew the whereabouts of the crashed plane, I instructed the A.C. to go to that place and to send word out first as to organize the search parties.

As OGA OGA I found S/ Sgt. G. of the U.S.A. who was able to give me some further information as to the whereabouts of the remainder of the crew of the plane, but S/ Sgt. G.'s information amounted to nothing as he was even unable to state where he himself had landed and was only able to state definite information to the number of the plane, the tail number had also disappeared, but very vague and casual about the whole affair.

The Mission Sister took charge of me and ordered me to bed.

In the late afternoon A.C. KOKIA and A.C. OGA reported to me with a party of carriers, having been sent by V.O. JAKI.

A.C. ITC also reported and stated that the native had no idea of the whereabouts of the plane, but he only advised that it was at SIVA SIVA because he had found the S/ Sgt. in that vicinity.

28.5.43.

Sent A.C.'s KOKIA, OGA and AKORI to organize other search parties.



PATROL REPORT.28.5.45. (cont.)

Arranged suitable stretcher for S/Sgt Lott who is suffering from bruised back and apparently fractured ribs.

29.5.45.

Sent S/Sgt Lott per stretcher to YUBUNA with entire party of carriers and per A.C. S/Cpl., the S/Cpl. will stay in charge of the carriers whilst A.C. IPO proceeds to KAIRUKU with murder party, with Sim I sent will from OYIABA and myself.

No further information of plane or members of the crew.

30.5.45.

Should be able to leave here to morrow, feeling very improved. No further information of aircraft or crew, all the villages are searching, from DEVA DEVA to YANI, so it should not be long before some information comes through.

31.5.45.

Proceeded to ONOBA late in the day after waiting in case any news came from the search parties, spent the night in the Barracks which are badly in need of renewal.

1.6.45.

Proceeded to YUBUNA where I received correspondence from the D.O. KAIRUKU, it had been at the Mission Station for several days and I had anticipated the instructions to make a search for the missing aircraft and crew.

The Father in charge of the Mission told me that they had sent S/SGT Lott to ARAPONIE in the Mission truck.

2.6.45.

On arrival at ARAPONIE I received instructions from the D.O. per A.C. Col. KANINI, of KAIRUKU, to recruit a further 100 carriers and have them at NIPO by the 9th. June. For the D.O.'s pending arrival.

I instructed S/Cpl. YULU to contact the A.C. in charge of the search parties and to leave the parties in the hands of the V.C.'s. After they recruited carriers, I then supervised the commencement of the party of carriers on their way to OYIABA under Cpl. KANINI.

3.6.45.

Received instructions from D.O. per V.C. of OYIABA that I am to proceed and establish headquarters at OYA OYA to conduct the search parties for the missing aircraft, the plane having landed safely at it's base with the other two members intact.

As I have only a few carriers and no rations I reduced my gear to a minimum, and proceeded to OYIABA.

4.6.45.

Proceeded to OYA OYA, rain during the trip and entire party received a good soaking, track is very sandy and very chopped land.

On arrival at OYA OYA A.C. OYIABA reported to me and stated that a very exhaustive search had been made from DEVA DEVA to YANI, all existing tracks had been followed and now once made to almost every part of that large tract of country, there had been no discoveries of any kind.

5.6.45.

Sent S/Cpl. YULU, A.C. KANINI, and S/Cpl. OYIABA to YANI to work back along the NIAMA River, A.C. KANINI and ALSO I sent to IMBONIE, in this way should be able to recruit the required no. of carriers and have them at NIPO on the 9th. June.

Still no further information of missing aircraft.

6.6.45.

I visited several villages between OYA OYA and DEVA DEVA but was unable to obtain any carriers, or hear any information of the missing aircraft.

PATROL REPORT.7.6.43.

Managed to procure four carriers for Sgt. Poverham.  
Sent the V.C. of MUBIKA to make the rounds of DEVA DEVA and HAFULU to ensure what the search parties were making an effort to find the missing airman..

Relief for Sgt. Poverham passed through on his way to MUBIKA, he delivered to me a bag of correspondence.

8.6.43.

No information of the missing airman or carriers, some of the village people from the MIBALA River are telling strange stories about the two police I sent over there to recruit carriers.

Rain in the late afternoon.

9.6.43.

A.C.'s. PURITA and B'II, of KAIRUKU, reported to me late in the evening with letter containing change of instructions from the D.O.  
No reports from the search parties of the police.

10.6.43.

Sent A.C. PURITA to take charge of search party at DEVA DEVA for a few days and then to proceed to the other villages in turn and do the same  
A.C. B'II I returned to KAIRUKU with correspondence.

11.6.43.

Lt Col. KULAU returned in the late afternoon with party of carriers, with him was Cpl. K'NINI who informed me that he had a party of fifty carriers under an A.C. in DEVA DEVA who would arrive in GRA DA tomorrow, I decided to wait until they came and then proceed to pick up the gear with out any danger of having to relay it.

12.6.43.

Examined carriers and found them to be a party of fifty two from the various villages around MIBALA, the Lt Col. could give me no information as to the whereabouts of A.C.s. IOMALA and ALANG, but stated that he had heard rumours that IOMALA was holding a feast in his village.

No information from the search parties, and no sign of the party of carriers from DEVA DEVA.

13.6.43.

Sent the carriers to ARAPOMI with instructions to bring all the stores to MUBIKA, also sent an A.C. to DEVA DEVA to find the cause of delay of the other party of carriers.

No further information of the search parties except through village people who tell us that they are still unsuccessful in their efforts.

14.6.43.

A.C.'s. returned from DEVA DEVA, they reported the search is still going on in the country surrounding that village in the general direction of MIBALA.

They also reported that the party of carriers had returned to their villages to deposit the pay they had been given, but would return.

Still no word from A.C.s. IOMALA and ALANG who are long over due, rumours of IOMALA's feast are becoming more and more prevalent.

15.6.43.

Party of carriers returned from depositing their wages with a couple of empty drums, I sent them immediately to MUBIKA.

Sent A.C. to MIBALA for further carriers, and returned to MIBALA.

16.6.43.

ALANG returned with small party of carriers, he laid several complaints against A.C. IOMALA which have been dealt with in a separate report, he said that he had been forced to leave MIBALA several days after leaving, and not knowing the country had experienced difficulty in procuring carriers, he did not know where IOMALA was at the present time.



PASIRI R. CRT.17.6.43.

Sent A.C. ALANO and his party of carriers to YUBUWA to join the others who are relaying the gear from ARAPONTI.  
No information from the search parties.

18.6.43.

A.C. KOMALA reported to me with a small party of carriers. I checked the carriers, twenty one, and sent them on to ARAPONTI, KOMALA and the two V.C. who accompanied him I held for questioning.

A.C. KOMALA denied all charges made against him by A.C. ALANO, so I sent him to take charge of the carriers on their way to ARAPONTI.

I next questioned the two V.C.'s., they also denied that KOMALA had made any feast or had stopped needlessly in any village.

The V.C. of BOLA reported to me and he made a statement saying that BOLA was KOMALA's village, and that KOMALA had stopped in BOLA for five or six days, and during that time had killed a pig and made a feast; when confronted with that statement the other two V.C.'s. decided to tell the truth, and said they had only made the previous statements to stop KOMALA getting into trouble.

I then sent the three V.C.'s. to join the carriers.

19.6.43.

L/Cpl. and large party of carriers returned to day with load of stores, the L/Cpl. reported that only enough for fifteen men remained at YUBUWA and it was to be brought forward by KOMALA's party.

An investigation of the stores showed that all boxes were intact but that there were no rations for the carriers, I shall be compelled to use biscuits as part rations, and one of the boxes of salt as a means of purchasing B.M. during the trip.

I made a Saturday issue to the police of meat, tobacco and matches which were included in the rations sent to me.

20.6.43.

Proceeded to BAVA BAVA, the people are already working in the road in places and are making a real good job of it considering they have no tools.

Purchased small quantity of H/B.

21.6.43.

Proceeded to MARUWI, as I go on notifying all V.C.'s. and council members that I want the road cleared on my return, it is apparent that the people are looking forward to the promised visit from the B.C.

Only able to purchase small quantity of H/B.

22.6.43.

I sent L/Cpl. UWAU and V.C.'s. HAVIRA & BORI ahead as an advance party to give the people plenty of time to bring native food to the barracks they will remain the party of UWAU.

I sent A.C.'s. ALANO & KAG back to meet KOMALA's party, V.C. will bring carriers on while ALANO will return with KOMALA and the V.C.'s. to MARUWI to lay charges at the court.

Proceeded to KOB, where I was only able to purchase small quantity of H/B.

23.6.43.

Proceeded to KUBI, road in a very bad state of repair, very rough and wet, making it a tough job for the carriers, on arrival there the party was received by the village and camp.

Purchased enough to H/B for the evening meal of the entire party.

24.6.43.

Proceeded to KUBI, where the stores were unloaded and during this procedure I found some of stores had rotted to powder but I did not know they included in the load.

Proceeded to arrive at B.C. MARUWI, and asked for further info.

PATROL REPORT.

No. 9.

25.6.43.

Assisted Cpl. Olsen with several small duties around the camp, and held an inspection of Barracks to see that they were being kept clean.

Received instructions from the D.O. to return immediately to Kairuku.

Rain through the afternoon and night.

26.6.43.

Sent two A.C.'s. to recruit carriers for my return trip.

A.C. MAGA and remainder of carriers with stores reported in in the mid afternoon.

Rain in the late afternoon and night.

27.6.43.

Set off for TAPINI with small party of carriers, rain at noon made me abandon my objective and I spent the night at the Barracks at OROBO, where I was able to purchase sufficient N/F for issue to the carriers.

With me as guide is A.C. SORLA.

28.6.43.

Proceeded to TAPINI, the rain yesterday made the road very slippery and made it hard going for the carriers.

On arrival at TAPINI A.C. MAIDA reported to me, and supplied N/F for the carriers.

29.6.43.

Proceeded to BURA BURA .

From TAPINI to river the track is very good, though there are a few obstructions; the bridge is in a very bad state of repair and should be condemned as it is unfit for carriers. The remainder of the road is in terrible condition, over grown and broken away, and made very hard work for the carriers.

30.6.43.

Proceeded to MAI MAI, the track is good being only marred by a small landslide or two.

V.C reports that on the last trip as carriers to GOIHALA the men had Purri Purri made against them and that three have died as a result.

1.7.43.

Left MAI MAI and made good time to the ST. JOSEPH R.

On arrival at the river it was found that the bridge was too narrow to allow the carriers to take the Patrol Boxes across so a raft was constructed and the gear brought to the other bank in that manner.

Owing to the delay our arrival at OBA OBA was rather late.

2.7.43.

Instructions were handed to me early this morning by an A.C., they included notice of transfer, and a report to fill on the KUBUNA air drome.

Proceeded to ONOBA where I was presently surprised to find new barracks, the building is very sound and only needs the addition of a good fire place to make it complete.

3.7.43.

Proceeded to KUBUNA, the first part of the road is, as usual, wet and muddy, but at the KUBUNA end it is now dry and in good condition for necessary repairs.

The Barracks at this stop are also in need of re-roofing, and new flooring is needed in the kitchen.



PATROL REPORT.

No. 10.

4.8.43.

Made out the report on the KUBUNA DROME, and found it has not many possibilities of development without extensive work.

Proceeded to BIOTO where I made arrangements for a canoe to be ready to take me to KAIRUKU tomorrow morning.

5.7.43.

Proceeded to KAIRUKU by canoe, making a slow trip on account of adverse tides.

Reported my arrival to D.O., and spent the afternoon making out my patrol report.

H. A. Scott Cpl.  
Patrol Officer.  
H. A. Scott.

District Headquarters,  
K A I R U K U.  
6th July 43.

8

D.D.S.  
M.A. AMM.

PATROL REPORT NO. 4 OF LAIKANI - 43/44.

Enclosed please find Cpl Scott's Report on the above patrol.

This P.O.'s health has not been too good and if he has any more attacks of fever, he will have to proceed to Port Moresby for medical attention. He leaves for USMPO shortly.

PAGE 4. 21.5.43. The matter referred to has been dealt with in the District Court.

MISSING AIRMAN. The missing airman was not found, I regret to say. Every effort was made, but he must be now regarded as lost. Two of them jumped out of a plane over DEVA DEVA, but whilst one got safely to the Coast, what happened to the other is a mystery. It would appear that his parachute did not open, and I am afraid the body will not be recovered. This has been reported to you by our signal of the 22/6/43.

W.H.H. Thompson.  
Major,  
D. O.

*Supp. for G  
copy of report  
copy*

*copy of report from to HAF  
11/7/43*

*W.D. 11/7/43 Return to ADDS  
18/9/43*

*OK  
DH*

*DS 2/3  
30/3/5*

*???*

*Dyflinch*



DS 30/3/6

P/R No. 5/43-44

STATION:- KAIRUKU

DISTRICT:- LAKEKAMU

AREA PATROLLED:- KANOSIA & HISIU SUB -

DISTRICTS.

PATROL OFFICER:- MAJOR W.H.H. THOMPSON

DATE:- 28 JUN/3 JUL 43

SIR  
2/5

No. IANKAMU 5/43/44.

REPORT OF A PATROL BY MAJOR W.H.H. JEFFERSON D.O.  
TO KANOSIA AND HESIU SUB-DISTRICTS.

DATE LEFT STATION. Monday 23.6.45 DATE RETURNED. Saturday 3.7.45

PURPOSES OF PATROL:- Visits to all rubber and coconut Pltns. in this area and holding Court where necessary.

PATROL ACCOMPANIED BY:- (a) Medical Assistant F. BURCHETT  
(b) R.P.C. 1 Opl and 6 Constables.  
(c) NATIVE CARRIERS. 16

MAP. See Y LIE ISLAND sheet.

LAST PATROL: in area made by Capt L.J. O'Malley May '45.

Medical Assistant. About one month previously.

ITINERARY.

MONDAY 23.6.45. Crossed over at Hall Sound to DEBENA in whaleboat not possessing a launch that is in order. Thence 5 miles to OU-OU Pltn., where I met Manager Sgt Clann. Another 3 miles to on I was met on the track from the beach near Cape Buckling to OROI village by Capt Chester with a lorry. He took me to AROA Pltn. near the TOU TOU or AROA River.

TUESDAY 29.6.45. Visited all the Coconut Pltns on the HESIU Mtsch. AROA, HESIU, IKLIKUCHA, PAIRS & OBU and OBO.

WEDNESDAY 30th. Crossed over the TOU TOU or AROA River at the AGIVAIW crossing near KIVIONA village, KABANI and was taken by lorry to KANOSIA. Transacted some business with Capt McKenna at KANOSIA rubber pltn and also at IOLORUA and DOA with the Managers concerned.

THURSDAY 1st July. W.O. Teally took me to VEIMAUPI Pltn on the VEIKA River, which runs into Galley Reach N.E. end. I transacted business there and then did the 2 1/2 miles walk from VEIMAUPI to MARIBOI Rubber Pltn in 1 hour 42 minutes over a native track across broken country. Inspected the N/L at MARIBOI and transacted business with the Manager Lt. L. Cay.

FRIDAY 2nd July. Inspected the N/L's at RUBBERLANDS Pltn and then was taken to Kanosia by the Rubberlands Manager, W.O. Brewster, in his launch. Finished off business there and recrossed the TOU TOU or AROA River to AROA Pltn. In the evening inspected a claim for damages to property by Sgt. L.J. Clann. Report on this forwarded to D.A.Q.M.G.

SATURDAY 3rd July. Got back to Station about 1600 hours. W.O. 1 Deen left in charge reporting all well.

GENERAL.

NATIVE LABOUR. I gave all N/L's at each Pltn visited, viz. OBO, OBU, IKI IKI, HESIU PT, AROA Coconut Pltns and KANOSIA, OOA, IOLORUA, AROAIA, MARIBOI, RUBBERLANDS and VEIMAUPI Rubber Pltns. The last named has both Rubber and Coconuts. Every native was given every opportunity to lay any complaints at the Line-ups, but not a single one made any of say 1,000 N/L's. The proportion of deserters I thought small, about 5 per cent. We must remember that these N/L's have been impressed for the first time in their lives, many had never worked before. Also that from KANOSIA and GALLEY REACH it is so easy to sneak into Port Moresby and get themselves lost in the numerous camps there, where I think they get very high wages from our Allies as washermen. We can catch them if they get back to their villages in most instances a percentage go "bush" and are very hard to find. Arrest depends on the Village Constable of the villages concerned to a great extent.

MEDICAL INSPECTIONS. Were held at each Pltn at the "line-up" by W.C. Burchett. All were examined for Venereal Disease, only at MARIBOI were any suspects found about half a dozen. Some WAIMA women had got there and I had them hunted off to their villages.

DDM  
157

ADMS

(1) ADMS (2) DDNL  
14/7/45  
P/A 22  
7



CIVILIAN OWNERS. I was very glad to meet once again my very old friends, Messrs [unclear], Ward, Pollard, who had just got back to their jobs. It will take them time to settle down, but I think it was a very wise move to bring them back.

HEALTH OF NATIVES. My own opinion was that it was very good indeed, a few natives, who should never have been signed on probably, were marked Class "C" by W.O. Burchett and returned to their villages. The KARADI natives, who live on the AROA River and never worked before, can hardly be recognised as the same men, who went to work say 18 months ago at KANOSIA. Their physique and bearing has improved to an extraordinary degree, the same remarks apply to the decadent NARA tribe, which lives about 15 miles East of Yule Island. They work at CBO Mission. The opponents of forced labour for natives might receive a shock, were these facts are explained to them. Over a period of 18 years I have watched the native birth rates in this District. The greatest increase in population was always at HESIU village from where the young men went to work voluntarily to the Coconut Products Ltd Deseccated Coconut Factory within a few miles of their village. The KARADIS and NARAS, who had a declining birth rate, may now their young men are working and well looked after follow suit.

NDMS  
82  
14/7/43

JUDICIAL. The only cases I took were for Desertion.

Nine (9) natives were convicted and sent to gaol.  
45        "        "        "        "        and fined.

W H H [Signature]  
Major,  
D. O.  
7.7.43.

DS 30/3/7

P/R No. 6/43-44.

STATION:- KAIRUKU.

DISTRICT:- LAKEKAMU

AREA PATROLLED:- TERAPU & COASTAL DISTRICTS.

PATROL OFFICER:- LT. C.H. RICH

DATE:- 25 JUN/6 JUL. 43.

9/2  
3/6



GLENN HERRICH, A.D.C.

LAN No 6 of 213/44

Objects of Patrol.

W/H/H  
D.O.  
15/7/43

- (1) Closing down of KOVU Sago making Camp. Paying off all casual female labour and returning them to their village. Engaging the male labour under C/s for construction work at, and around Base Area.
- (2) Recruiting the services of men with 4 and more children for 2 months casual labour, to be employed on a special task - KUNIMAIPA - BASE AREA Trap line.
- (3) General Duties.

Friday 25 June '43.

In company with W/O Still ( who is to be stationed at LALAPIPI) left Bulldog per the small de-snagging launch at 1200 hours, arrived at OTOMAI at 1530 hours and here transferred to one of the ALCV Barges. Continuing on downstream, a short call was made at Grim Point, and KOVU was reached at 2000 hours. Sgt BANFIELD (ANGAU) N.C.O. in charge of KOVU reported and was instructed to have all his labour assembled in the morning.

Saturday 26 June '43.

As the ration position in general, both at Base and the forward area is now well in hand I have been approached with a view to closing down the Sago production at this point. In the early days when most of the river transport was per canoe, and the arrival of rations very erratic, the produce from here was of great value, now however it has outlived its importance, and furthermore the palms in this vicinity are very scarce and the labourers have to travel a considerable distance before commencing work. Rather than move the camp to a new site I have decided to close down as I am of the firm opinion that the male labour at least, can be better employed on more useful and urgent jobs. The sum of £147 was paid out to casual labour both male and female, and arrangements made for the women folk complete with children etc to move down stream and from there they will return to their villages. The male labour numbering some 70 odd will proceed upstream in charge of Sgt BANFIELD and report at Base Area. Finalised matters at this point at 1130 hours, boarded a passing barge and arrived at TENAPO 1530 hours. W/O AMOURE and SGT HAYES both reported and informed me they were waiting transport to Moresby. Remained the night at TENAPO.

Q  
Ingen CP 20/7

Sunday 27 June '43.

Instructing R.P.C. Sgt MAO to visit the villages in the BOTUMOTU-MOVIAMI districts, self accompanied by W/O's STILL and AMOURE left per launch and called at MIRIVASI (the site now occupied by the 1 Aust Water Transport Coy) and inspected the launches impressed some time ago by ANGAU, separate report to D.O. KAIRUKU. Crossed the river and a few minutes walk along from LALAPIPI brought us to the new site occupied by the ANGAU representative and where the labour lines will be housed. In my opinion a reasonably safe distance from the workshops at MIRIVASI. Lieut Montgomery reported with mail from KAIRUKU and takes over from W/O AMOURE who I understand is proceeding on leave.

Monday 28 June '43.

Owing to the high tide we were unable to commence the journey until 1000 hours. Arriving at the mouth of the KAPUKI I instructed R.P.C. Consts ADWA & IMAGI to visit POPO village and ascertain if there were any deserters. Self continued on and made camp at LESE village.

Tuesday 29 June '43.

Leaving LESE continued on to IKKEA, self not feeling too well so decided to remain at this point and instructed R.P.C. Cpl TORO to proceed to GIAPU and bring the people along to this Rest House. Three R.P.C.'s

A 25/7 "Q" for info return to D.S. 1/25



from KAIRUKU with mail and deserters ~~was~~ reported and were instructed to carry on to TE APO.

30  
Wednesday 27 June '43.

Recruited 18 men from IOKEA and 25 from OIAPU. Arrested 2 deserters, and R.P.C. AUWA reported from POPO with a further 2 deserters. Left IOKEA 1300 hours and arrived back at LESE 1600 hrs. Camped for the night.

1 July  
Thursday 28 June '43.

Recruited 24 men from LESE and MIARU villages. Here the village people asked me to pay for 3 canoes impressed by Lieut Atkinson some 12 months ago. The story as given to me was that this Officer took possession of the canoes and promised payment later. The Vil Council and Vil Const not having any canoes of their own decided to take up a collection and purchase the canoes from ~~the~~ those who owned them. It appears in the collection even the owners subscribed and when the required amount was obtained it was handed over to the rightful owner. I interviewed the three owners and they admit to having received the sum of £5 each from village collections. I then paid out the sum of £9 to the Vil Const & Vil Council with strict instructions that they were to reimburse all those who had contributed to the original payment. Left LESE at 1400 hrs and arrived at LALAPIPI 1800 hrs.

Friday 29 June '43 2 July '43.

Left LALAPIPI 1000 hours and proceeded upstream to TE APO, here R.P.C. Sgt NATO reported having recruited or rather collected some 60 natives. Of this number 34 were selected for work and the others returned. The number now recruited for the special task is 120 and they should have no difficulty in completing their task well within the time allotted. Arranged with Lieut Montgomery to have these people sent upstream by the first available opportunity. R.P.C.'s L/Cpl TORE and AUWA sent back to IOKEA to arrest MORUA and take him on to KAIRUKU where he will be dealt with for "Having goods in possession", unfortunately I did not hear of this matter while at IOKEA myself otherwise I would have taken the necessary action. A barge having been placed at my disposal decided to visit KUKIPI village, which point was reached at 1300 hrs. Met Lieut Hugo of the 1 Aust Water Troop and also Sgt VESPER (ANGAU) both are employed erecting beacons etc., at the river mouth.

Saturday 3 July '43.

Leaving KUKIPI we proceeded up the TAURI and arrived at MOVIAMI where I went ashore and paid out wages due to the women folk who had worked at KOVU (sago making) some 9 months ago, unfortunately when having paid about 2/3 of the number I ran out of cash so the remainder will have to wait until I again visit the district. Leaving MOVIAMI we continued up to TE APO R.C. Mission, here we left the barge and walked across to the LAPEKAMU. Remained the night at TE APO and attended to official matters with Lieut Montgomery.

Sunday 4 July '43.

At TE APO engaged in official matters with Lieut Montgomery. C.R.E. Lieut Col Reinhold arrived from BULLDOG en route to Moresby.

Monday 5 July '43.

The launch "KUTUBU" having been placed at my disposal left TE APO at approximately 1100 hrs arrived KOVU 1700 hrs and tied up for the night. With the exception of one caretaker and his wife this point is now absolutely deserted and will in future serve as a staging camp.

Tuesday 6 July '43.

Left KOVU at 0600 hrs. Called at GRIME Point and inspected SGT BENFIELD new site, he and his labour a pair quite happy and contented in their ~~new~~ new location. Leaving GRIME Point arrived at Bulldog, 1700 hrs.

*Benfield*



TERRITORY OF PAPUA-NEW GUINEA.

PATROL REPORT No. 6.

Report of a Patrol to MUGUMAT No.2. and AREA.

OFFICER CONDUCTING THE PATROL : C.V.SINGLE.

AREA PATROLLED : Bush South East of Government  
Station. Sketch map attached.

OBJECTS of PATROL : 1. General Administration.  
2. Investigation of Lingual  
groups and the laying out of a new Patrol Route for the area.  
3. Census.  
4. War Damage.

DURATION of PATROL : 14/3/49 to 10/4/49.

LAST PATROL of AREA. : Part by Mr. L. DOOLAN P.O.  
5/4/48 to 20/4/48.

Part by Mr. F JONES P.O.  
7/10/47 to 20/10/47.

PERSONNEL ACCOMPANYING

: Reg. No.	Const.	KOBAGI
" " 6478	"	HOPLON
" " 3890	"	YOMI
" " 5142 B	"	GABIONG
No. M 632	N.M.O.	TOSU

DS 30/3/8

P/R No. 7/43-44. (KEREMA NR 2/43-44)

STATION:- KAIRUKU.

DISTRICT:- LAKE KAMU

AREA PATROLLED:- VILLAGES WEST OF KEREMA

PATROL OFFICER:- LT M.W BERGIN

DATE:- 24 JUN/8 JUL 43.

8/2  
3/8

Ran  
W



No 7<sup>of</sup> 43/44

LAN

DS 2/3

PATROL                      REPORT

by

Lieut. M. W. Bergin

**PATROL TO:** Villagers west of Kerema.  
Peto, Uaripi, Mei'i, Keuru Group, Vailala and  
Vailala River Groups, Orekelo Group. Also to  
Araimiri, Maira and Vaiviri Plantations, and  
Huiva Beach Landing Ground.

Left Station. .... 24th. June 1943  
Returned. .... 8th July 1943

- OBJECTS OF PATROL:**
- (1) Inspection of Villages and village matters.
  - (2) Propaganda.
  - (3) Payment to relatives of money sent by natives working at Bulldog L. of C.
  - (4) Arrest of deserters.
  - (5) Search for sick villagers who were ordered to hospital but failed to report.
  - (6) Inspection and report of Huiva Beach Landing Ground and instructions re maintenance.

Patrol accompanied by (a) Five R.P.C.  
(b) Twelve carriers.

Previous Patrol Report Ref. for Map: District Map.

Last Patrol to area made by:

- (a) District Services Field Staff - Lt. Hardy,  
22/2/43 to 11/3/43.
- (b) Medical Assistant - Sgt Jaensch,  
7/5/43 to 22/5/43.

C.O.  
R.P.C.

Orb 27/7/43

Page 3.

PIA 27/7

Return to D.S.

PATROL REPORT KEREMA No. 2/43-44.  
-----

by  
Lieut. M. W. Bergin.  
-----

1943.

- 24th. June. Left Kerema Station for Huiva Plantation by beach track, inspecting Petoi, Uaripi, and Mei'i villages en route.  
Propaganda. Gramophone records in Motu language made by Papuan natives who visited Australia recently were played to the villagers of Uaripi, Petoi and Mei'i and were implemented with talks and explanations by Interpreter Kivavia (who had accompanied the party to Australia) and lectures by myself on the progress of the war, our victories, and the natives' duty. The people listened attentively but it was apparent that much of it was incomprehensible to their simple minds.  
Village Matters. At Uaripi, on the Bay side, extensive erosion of foreshore is rapidly assuming alarming dimensions: a large number of coconut palms and many houses have already been destroyed and; unless tidal influences alter considerably, the whole of the island will become inhabitable in a year or so. Immediate temporary remedy lies in gradually removing the house towards the inner foreshore.
- 25th. June. At Huiva Plantation. Inventory of aviation fuel. Inspection of beach landing ground (then unusable because of driftwood etc) and obtaining measurements and data for report on same. One constable and three indentured labours to remain here to keep beach permanently clear of logs and debris; instructed nearby villages to assist whenever necessary.  
Propaganda. Gramophone records and talks by Kivavia and self to assembled natives of Keuru group villages which were listened to attentively if not appreciatively.  
Village Matters. Money sent home to relatives by natives working at Bulldog was paid out and explained, it being pointed out to them that these amounts did not represent total earnings or indicate alteration of contract periods but were merely remittances which the men had asked the office to distribute. Villages were inspected and instructions given to keep them clean and neat. No complaints.
- 26th. June. To Vailala East along beach.  
Propaganda. Gramophone records and talks by Kivavia and self to assembled natives at Koyalahu and Vailala East, but unfortunately the spring broke at the latter village. Greater intelligence and interest seemed to be displayed here.  
Village Matters. Payments and explanations of money sent home by natives working at Bulldog. Villages en route inspected and instructed to be kept clean; fence around Vailala East ordered to be repaired as sufficient women, old men and children available for this job. Rest-house in good repair and fairly clean.  
Discussed education of youngsters at Vailala East with Samoan L.M.S. teacher; apparently the position is satisfactory.  
Deserters. Obtained information about some deserters.
- 27th. June. On to Orokolo along beach. Called on Rev. Dewdney of L.M.S.  
Propaganda. Talks by Kivavia and self to villages en route.  
Village Matters. Payments and explanations of money sent home by natives at Bulldog. Villages en route inspected and found to be generally cleaner than those previously looked over, especially the Orokolo group. Much storm damage to several hamlets near Pakwabu, coconut palms and houses having been destroyed. Rest-houses in good repair and fairly clean.  
Deserters. Arrested two deserters.
- 28th. June. At Orokolo.  
Education. Discussed this subject with Rev. Dewdney, pointing out that it was most desirable for education to continue but that, owing to absence of menfolk on war work, school children should be instructed to assist as far as possible with the domestic and agricultural aspect of village life.



Mr. Dewdney agreed and promised his influence.

Propaganda. A very large gathering of people were assembled in the school house where records were played with gramophone provided by the Mission. These were explained by Kivavia and followed up with lectures by myself and Mr. Dewdney. Many questions were asked and answered; and the people were very interested in the war but more particularly in the well-being of their menfolk at Bulldog and the question of leave for them to pay short visits to their homes. I would suggest that permission for Mr. Dewdney to visit the Bulldog area and talk with the natives there would be of great value as some misunderstandings exist as to the terms of their employment.

Village Matters. Several small disputes settled. Payment and explanation of money sent home from Bulldog.

Deserters. Four arrested with some difficulty.

- 29th. June. a.m. To Arehava Villages. p.m. to Vaiviri Plantation along beach to Pakuwabu, hnece inland.  
Propaganda. As at Orokolo, large gathering of Arehava and Muru people listened attentively to the records and talks and appeared keenly interested.  
Village Matters. Villages found to be clean and tidy. Payments and explanations of cash from Bulldog. Sick natives, mostly ulcers and sores, previously instructed by M/A Sgt Jaensch, told to report to Orokolo Mission hospital by arrangement with Rev. Dewdney who is giving much assistance in this direction.  
Deserters. Two more arrested and forwarded with others to Kerema under escort.  
Constable Koriki, overcome by a sudden fit of insanity during questioning of deserters, attempted to attack me with bayonet. In a short time he recovered and was sent to Kerema.  
  
Met Sgt. Poole and another en route Kariava to Port Romilly.
- 30th. June. a.m. at Vaiviri Plantation, Pte. Lynch i/c. Iori and Lepokera villages. p.m. by canoe to Maira Plantation, thence to Belepa S.D.A. Mission.  
Propaganda. Records and talks to plantation labours and villagers, former being exhorted to increase production and the uses of copra being explained to them. These natives were not as keenly interested but nevertheless listened attentively.  
Village Matters. Bullgo cash remittances were handed out to relatives and explained. Instructions given for villages to be maintained in a state of cleanliness. Sick people lined and ordered to resort to hospital. One trivial complaint.
- 1st. July. a.m. at Belepa. p.m. returned to Vaiviri Plantation hearing complaint en route and ordering parties to report to Kerema. Arrested one deserter.  
At Belepa word had been sent around to nearby villages to assemble here but a fair proportion failed to attend.  
Propaganda. Records and talks by Kivavia, self, and Solomon Is. teacher Tauko. People not particularly interested beyond the novelty.  
Village Matters. Tauko complained that a large number refused to attend school; these were lined, the benefits of education carefully explained to them, also the laws relating to the subject. Cash from Bulldog was paid out with explanations. The Mission station was inspected and found to be exceptionally clean and well cared for. New roofs ordered for workshop and dwellings. Sick people lined and ordered to hospital.
- 2nd. July. Returned to Orokolo to make inventory of Muru Plantation and Orokolo Industries. Discussed these matters with Mr. Coghill.  
Deserters. Arrested five deserters en route and heard news of others.
- 3rd. July. At Orokolo, stock-taking and enquiries re Muru Plantation.  
Deserters. Arrested four deserters.
- 4th. July. At Orokolo. Heard and settled several trivial complaints.  
Deserters. Arrested five more deserters - - -

Kerema under escort.

- 5th. July. To Vaiviri Plantation in search of more deserters en route intending to go per canoe to Koialahu but canoes did not arrive as arranged. Made enquiries if sick village people had departed for Kerema.
- 6th. July. a.m. at Vaiviri awaiting reports from Herakera and Iori. p.m. by canoe along backwaters to Koialahu, gathering sick children for hospital.
- 7th. July. a.m. to Vailala East, Vailala West, Hilo and Kukipi for deserters and sick and small village complaint. Sent constables to Belepaa and Iori for deserters. Found Vailala East people had not repaired their fences, so made them do so immediately under my supervision. p.m. back to Koialahu.
- 8th. July. Left Koialahu and arrived Kerema 1900 hrs. Picked up various natives for hospital on the way.

-----

REPORT ON CONSTABLES ACCOMPANYING PATROL.

-----

Reg. No. 1133. Cpl. UNOBO. Inclined to be insolent on one occasion when reprimanded for permitting two newly arrested deserters to escape. On another occasion failed to heed my prohibition of betel-nut chewing whilst on duty. Otherwise fairly useful man.

Reg. No. 1856. Const. TAMUTAI. Not much to be said about him; does his job probably to the best of his limited ability.

Reg. No. 1233. Const. WAWSI. Same remarks as above.

Reg. No. 2275. Const. SEVESE. Fairly good man with some ability. Obedient and reliable, but suffers from leg swellings and thus useless for long patrols.

811.  
Reg. No./Const. KORIKI. Though unimaginative, a good reliable and obedient man but subject to periods of insanity apparently due to his capture and imprisonment by Japanese at Salama. He is, therefore, incapacitated for the duties of a policeman and I recommend that he be discharged and returned to his home.

*Reg. No. 811  
 Const. KORIKI  
 has been mentioned  
 from R.P.B. - ensure*

*676 berr  
 27/7/43*

(Sgd) M. W. Bergin. Lieut.



DS30/3/11

P/R No. 10/43-44.

STATION:- KAIRLIKU

DISTRICT:- LAKE KAMU

AREA PATROLLED:- BULLDOG - TERAPO L/C.

PATROL OFFICER:- CPL SCOTT, N A

DATE:- 22/28 JUL 43

8/R  
2/5

*[Handwritten signature]*

AUSTRALIAN MILITARY FORCES

NEW GUINEA FORCE  
HEADQUARTERS

18

Number of 213/44  
30/3/50

PATROL REPORT.

No. OF REPORT. 30/3/50

Patrol Officer. N.A. Scott. Cpl.

Other Europeans on Party. NIL.

Number of R.P.C. Personnel. 1 L/Cpl., 2 A.C.

Last Medical Patrol. Medical Assistants are in attendance at properly maintained Native Hospitals.

Date of leaving Station. July 22nd. '43.

Date of completion of Patrol. July 28th. '43.

Number of Carriers. 5.

Other Personnel on Party. 1 personal boy.

Reason for Patrol. To inspect all Native Camps on the L of C Road Construction.

G  
Camp ADDS.  
22/8/43  
W.D. 11/8  
Returning ADDS.  
10/9/43



# Torn Page(s)

## PATROL REPORT.

No 10 Lak of 413/44

July 22nd. '43. Thursday.

Left Bulldog and proceeded by the road route to Deadchinaman Ck. Camp where I spent the night.

The road, owing to the heavy rain, was in a very bad state, the side tracks were full of mud and water and very slippery, the timber on the road was in places floating on the flood waters, and even in the solid places it was very hard walking for the carriers.

On arrival at the Deadchinaman Ck. Camp I inspected the Native lines and found them to be in the best condition possible, special attention has been paid to hygiene, proper sanitary arrangements and very clean barrack area with good barracks seem to have put the natives in this camp in a very good state of mind as there were no complaints.

July 23rd. '43. Friday.

Proceeded to Fox's Camp, the track along this section of the road is very soggy but apart from that is very easy walking.

During the trip I made inspections of all native quarters along the road and found them to be quite satisfactory, some of the temporary camps are very rough but are in most cases fitted with a water-proof roof.

The Barracks at Fox's Camp are solidly constructed and are in very good condition, proper sanitary arrangements have been set up and the whole area is clean of rubbish or filth.

The labourers stated that though the rations are good they are often short of such commodities as tobacco and sugar etc., some complained that they had not been issued with blankets but as there are no blankets in the area at the present time nothing can be done about that; a very general complaint was the shortage of material for rams, a request was also made to me that I do something towards setting up a Trade Store in the area.

July 24th. '43. Saturday.

Proceeded to Center Camp, the track along this section of the road is excellent and presents no trouble to carriers.

I inspected all native quarters along the road and found them to be in good condition, a fairly general request was made for more blankets, material for rams and that a trade store be set up in the area.

Center Camp Labour Line is a model establishment and needs no further comment.

The Native Hospital at this station leaves much to be desired the present building is not large enough to accommodate the number of patients; besides that aspect is the more important ones that the building is not completely roofed and has no sides.

Rations at this point are on a sliding scale owing to the numerous transport difficulties but the natives are quite satisfied, the continual shortage of tobacco and other incidental commodities is tending to make them discontented and also the fact that rami material is very short, the natives claim that if a trade store was available they would be able to buy these articles and a lot of the petty discontent would vanish.

I was approached by several natives in this camp who made the same request, namely, that they had large families and their wives were in need of them at home to support the children; in some cases the men have been away from their villages for two years.

July 25th. '43. Sunday.

As I heard early in the morning that the A.D.O. Lt. Rich was on the road on a patrol to Edie Ck. I decided to stop in the camp and see if he had any change of orders for me.

Lt. Rich arrived in the afternoon, he instructed me to return to Bulldog, and to save carrier strength to do the return trip by carriers who had brought their loads forward and were returning to their base camp.

# Torn Page(s)

## PATROL REPORT.

PAGE "2."

July 26th. '43. Monday.

Obtained carriers who had brought loads from Fox's camp and proceeded to that camp where I spent the night, as the carriers did not arrive at Center Camp until mid-day my arrival at Fox's was made in the late afternoon.

July 27th. '43. Tuesday.

With a party of carriers from the Fifteen Mile Camp I made trip to Deadchinaman Ck., arriving in the early afternoon, as there no trucks at the A.S.C. Depot I decided to stay the night.

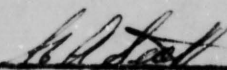
July 28th. '43. Wednesday.

Dispensed with carriers and proceeded to Bulldog by trucks bringing up the supplies to the Deadchinaman Ck. A.S.C. Depot.

## GENERAL REMARKS.

A trade store in this area would do much towards keeping the natives in a happier frame of mind, most of them have some money and all are in need of many little items that are always included in the makeup of a contented native.

I would suggest that men with families of five children or more be paid off and returned to their villages on the termination of their contracts; they hear many exaggerated rumours of conditions in their villages and are always the first to desert.

  
N.A.Scott. Cpl Patrol Officer



DS 30/3/12

P/R No. 10/43-44 (KEREMA 1/43-44)

STATION:- KAIRUKU.

DISTRICT:- LAKEKAMU.

AREA PATROLLED:- VILLAGES EAST OF KEREMA

PATROL OFFICER:- CPT. WEARNE, GRC.

DATE:- 1/6 JUL 43.

PR  
315

PATROL REPORT KEREMA 1/43-44

By Cpl. G.R.G. Fearnø.

Period of patrol : 1st July, 1943 to 6th July, 1943.

A patrol was carried out by me for the purpose of visiting all villages east of Kerema extending as far as LILIFIRU, and returning to Kerema Station a number of labourers who had completed one month's leave from Port Moresby.

1st July : With Sig. Walshø, K.D., I left Kerema and, passing through SILO, arrived at UAMAI, Sig. Walshø going to Port Moresby.

2nd July : We went from UAMAI to KARAMA and onto KOARU where we met Rev. Brown who was about to leave for MOTU MOTU. Sig. Walshø accompanied Rev. Brown to KUKIPI. A/C NAHO went with these two and from KUKIPI with A/C KAIKI took 11 Goaribari boys to TERAPO.

3rd July : Visited LILIFIRU. This village is in good condition and was very clean. In reply to a complaint by Rev. Brown that the people of this village were not co-operating with other villages in supplying the hospital at KOARU with food, the Councillors stated that the people deliberately cut themselves short of food at times in order to supply the food required. Sgts. Latimer and McKenzie arrived at KOARU and remained overnight before leaving for KUKIPI en route to Port Moresby.

4th July : Sgts. Latimer and McKenzie to KUKIPI. A/Cs NAHO and KAIKI returned having met the A.D.C. Bulldog at KUKIPI. Returned to KARAMA, visiting the villages of URU, ARU, PUKARU, FANA, and MEROI. With the exception of URU, all these villages were very tidy.

5th July : Left KARAMA and visited BRAVIRI, MORA, KEVEA, MA'ARU, and KUKUWO before reaching UAMAI. As at KARAMA all the boys whom I had to collect, were ready for me and I was able to move onto SILO visiting IRONE, PANAKIRU, LALABO, IRIFIRU, and AIKABURUKA on the way. An A/C arrived from KEREMA during the late afternoon with a letter from the A.D.C. requesting the apprehension of seven deserters from Cupola Plantation. A/Cs NAHO, HAINA, and KAIKI arrested these boys and brought to SILO.

6th July : Collected all the labourers except one who is at KOARU hospital. The A/Cs were instructed to take them and the seven deserters and wait for me at CUPOLA whilst I went to ERABADA. After rejoining the labourers at CUPOLA, the patrol returned to KEREMA.

REMARKS:

ROADS. On the forward journey I travelled along the beach after crossing Cape Cupola. Movement here was quick. From LILIFIRU I returned by the track above high-water mark. This path is clearly defined and in excellent condition. From SILO I went by canoe to the landing leading to the track to ERABADA. Due to work carried out under Capt. Masby's supervision this road is wide and the best over which I travelled.

NEST HOUSES. No complaint can be made in regard to the Nest Houses on the road. They are all well constructed and the village people keep them clear of refuse.

NATIVE AGRICULTURE. In all the villages it is apparent that work in the gardens is industrious. Surplus food is taken to Rev. Brown's hospital at KOARU. Only at LILIFIRU was there any complaint of a shortage. The Councillors assured me that every effort was being made to rectify this shortage.

*G.R.G. Fearnø*  
Cpl.  
G.R.G. Fearnø.  
Patrol Officer.



DS 30/3/13

P/R No. 11/43-44.

STATION: KAIRUKU

DISTRICT: LAKE KAMU

AREA PATROLLED: PINUPAKA, - IKOEA - APINAIPI

PATROL OFFICER: LT. G. P. HARDY.

DATE: 9/20 AUG 43

P/R  
3/13

NO 11 LAR of 43/44

PATROL REPORT MADE BY G. P. HARDY R.O., KAIRUKU.

and  
DO

POLICE ACCOMPANYING PATROL - L/CP. KAI, UNINI AND A.C. BURKETT.

PERIOD - 12 DAYS - 9TH TO 20TH AUGUST.

PURPOSE OF PATROL WAS TO ARREST DESERTERS WHO HAD DESERTED FROM THE VARIOUS LINES OF COMMUNICATION. THE AREA PATROLLED WAS FROM PINUPAKA TO IOKEA AND INLAND TO WANAIPU.

9th August 1943.

Acting under instructions from D.O. Kairuku, departed on patrol, 10.30 a.m. in the station launch with 14 ex deserters as carriers. The sea being fairly calm proceeded past Pinupaka and landed to within a few miles of Mai-Era plantation. There met English and handed him stores for the plantation. Then proceeded along the beach for Waima. On the way met M.O. Burchett who was returning from a medical patrol. After leaving Burchett ran into some police who were taking deserters back to the station. A few police continued with me and the deserters were forwarded to Kairuku, under escort of V.C's and an A.C. Arrived Waima 4 p.m. and made camp.

(Gilbert English is the half caste in charge of Mai-Era plantation)

10th August.

Had all V.C's and Councillors called together in connection with deserters, some of whom had been outstanding for weeks and had to be caught. They previously had been out with A.C's arresting many deserters and were on the whole doing a good job. Having discussed matters re the deserters had the relatives called together, and explained to them that these boys had run away and were hiding in the bush, and if they came in themselves things would be much better for everybody. I told them to send out word to come in as they were the ones who knew the hiding places. As I had to go to Iokea it would give them a few days to give themselves up. If they didn't action would have to be taken. That morning several came in. Having inspected the village, and given final instructions to the V.C's and Councillors departed 1 p.m. proceeding along the beach for Oiapu. The deserters who came in were used for carriers. On reaching Cape Possession had to turn inland as it was high tide. Some miles from the village of Misure ran into Sgt. Burke in rather an exhausted condition as he had come from Vaipour per push bike, but could not make the beach all the way because of the tides and had had to push it through the bush track for several miles with his gear attached. My carriers took possession of his gear and we proceeded to Oiapu, 8 p.m. and made camp.

11th August.

Having waited for the tide departed 9 a.m. and proceeded along the beach for Iokea arriving 12/15 p.m. Called V.C. and Councillors together re deserters, but the few that were there had been arrested and taken to Kairuku. Having inspected the village which was up to standard continued with work re deserters.

12th August.

14 deserters forwarded under police escort to Terapo. Sgt. Burke left on his way to Kerema. Obtained carriers and departed 8 a.m. for Oiapu. There changed carriers, and proceeded along the beach rounding Cape Possession for Kivori, arrived 2.45 p.m. and made camp. Called V.C's and Councillors together re deserters.

13th August.

Had the relatives of the known deserters brought to me and explained to them what was expected of them, and if the deserters came in of their own accord things would be better for everybody concerned. Within half an hour or so 7 boys came and reported to me. V.C. of Kivori-Kui had been doing good work. A few deserters were still outstanding, but these had been searched for for weeks by the police, and must be in some other area. Departed for Waima 2 p.m. arrived there 3/15 p.m. Called V.C's and Councillors together and checked a list of deserters with them.



14th August.

Received letter from D.O. in connection with an aircraft which was supposed to have gone down ~~in~~ in the vicinity of Apanaipi which is on the Biaru River. Forwarded A.C. to villages Bereina and Mou to pick up boys who were required by D.O. for checking. Having obtained these boys the A.C. was to proceed to Kairuku. Left an A.C. in the village with instructions re deserters, took the boys already arrested for carriers and departed 11.30 a.m. for Kivori by the beach. From there cut inland for Babanongo using a guide which had been sent from Kairuku, arrived there 4 p.m. and made camp. Met a Father there of the Catholic Mission and inquired about news of the plane, but he had none, nor did any of the natives who were questioned.

15th August.

Having obtained canoes the patrol set off 7.30 a.m. and proceeded down the Edebe Creek until we ran into the Biaru River which was followed until we reached Apanaipi, arrived there midday. Had all the village people called together and gave them the news about the plane, but unfortunately none of them had any tales to tell. Anyway I gave them instructions to keep an eye out for any wreckage of parachutes they may come across. That evening had any boys who had been out in the fields all day brought to me in hope of some news, but none of them knew anything about the plane. Seeing that the natives knew nothing of the plane it was an even chance that it had come down somewhere else, maybe near Popo. I would leave next morning for Biaru. Our guide decided to take a walk being a prisoner, so that meant another search.

16th August.

The escaped prisoner had not been arrested, so an A.C. was left there to search for him as the V.C. and Councillors had, unfortunately gone to Kairuku. Departed Apanaipi 8 a.m. and proceeded down the river to Biaru village. On the way down gained some information from the natives that they had heard that the plane had come down in the vicinity of Popo. Having reached Biaru proceeded along the beach to Lese to check up on information already received. There the story was that the plane had come down near Popo and that a N/Intr. with some soldiers from Lalapipi had gone in search of it. Having gained this information turned back along the beach for Iokea as there was still work to be completed at Waima. Arrived Iokea 4.30 p.m. and made camp.

17th August.

Departed 7 a.m. and proceeded along the beach for Ciapu. There checked up on some work which was given to the village people on my last trip there. It had been carried out. As it was mid-tide the patrol proceeded along the beach around Cape Possession passing Kivori beach villages to Waima, arrived 3 p.m. Progress was rather slow owing to the soft sand especially rounding Cape Possession where the tide was much nearer the rocks than in other parts. In fact in several places going around the cape ~~it~~ it was necessary to crawl over the rocks.

18th August.

During the morning carried on with work re the deserters. A number of deserters came and reported to me. They said that they had heard through their relatives what I had told them, and came straight in. Nearly all the deserters in the Waima area came in except those which had been outstanding for several weeks, and it is believed that they have gone to some distant village to hide. In fact some of them have taken their wives with them. Gave final instructions to the V.C.'s and Councillors to arrest any boy who could not prove that he wasn't a deserter. Departed 2.30 p.m. for Mou. However on reaching Mai Era plantation very heavy rain fell, so the patrol stayed there the night.

19th August.

Departed 7.30 a.m. and proceeded along the beach for a couple of miles and then cut inland onto a bush track which led to Mou village, arrived there 8.45 a.m. Called the V.C., Councillors and village people together and told them that there were at least 5 outstanding deserters from their village, and that it was their job as well as the government's to arrest them. Mou boys are very hard to catch once they have deserted. Having given instructions to the V.C. and Councillor to keep a good look out for these boys as they had to be arrested, (They had already given enough trouble) departed 3.30 p.m. down to the beach and then proceeded to Bimpaka, arrived 5.30 p.m. L/Cpl. Kai had been sent ahead for Kairuku with a note to D.O. requesting the launch to pick the patrol up with 20 deserters.



20th August.

As the launch had not turned up by 10 o'clock I guessed it was not available, so 3 canoes were obtained and the patrol with the deserters under police escort set off for the station. It was a very slow trip as there was hardly a breathe of air thus meaning that the canoes had to be paddled. Arrived at the station 12.30 p.m. and reported to the D.O.

Object of Patrol.

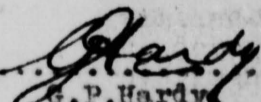
1. To arrest deserters who had deserted from the various lines of communication.
2. To interrogate any natives between the ages of 16 and 25 who were not signed on or who were in their villages without a permit.

DESSERTERS.

Throughout the patrol 21 deserters were arrested. Of these 21 deserters however, 20 came in and reported of their own free will as they were given the chance to do so before action was taken to catch them. On my arrival at the various villages the V.C's, Councillors and the relatives of the known deserters were called together. It was explained to them that it was known that these deserters were hiding in the bush, and that they would be given the chance of sending word out for the boys concerned to come and report. It was also explained to them that every time a boy deserted from the line that it was one less to help the army in its vast undertakings, also it meant a lot more work for the V.C's and Councillors of their own villages and certain waste of time for the government, who had to go and chase them if the V.C's or A.C's were unsuccessful. If the deserters came in of their own free will it would be better for them and save everybody else a lot of trouble. In the first morning at Waima 7 boys reported. All these boys the police and V.C's had been after for some time. As I had to go to Iokea they would have a few days to come in from their hiding place. Returning from Iokea I went to Kivori where the same tactics were carried out. The first morning 5 came in of their own accord. Action had to be taken to get 2 boys, but they reported within an hour and there was no harm done. On my arrival at Waima the second time the remaining 7 deserters reported. During the patrol a few deserters escaped, but they would be soon arrested as there were police stationed at different points apart from the V.C's and Councillors, some of whom had the arresting part down to a fine art. The patrol was very short of police which made things a little more difficult. There are still some outstanding deserters, but these have been hunted for for weeks, and information has been gained from several places that they have gone with their wives to inland villages or to another district, and thus it is very hard to trace such deserters. However the V.C's and Councillors know of these and they have their instructions in regards to arresting them. This applies especially to Mou boys. The deserters brought in will, I am sure stick to their jobs in future.

REMAINING VILLAGE BOYS.

There were a number of fit boys from Babiko, Bersina, Mou and Abiara who had to report to the station. Some of these boys were sent to the station during the patrol and others had been given instructions to obtain native building material, and to report to the station at a certain date. There were a few boys back from the lines having a spell in their village, but other than the lists given me by the D.O. there were no fit boys in the villages passed through by the patrol.

  
 ...Lieut.  
 G.P. Hardy  
 P.O. Kairuku.

P.S. The escaped prisoner mentioned on 15th August has been arrested, and is now in Kairuku gaol.



Ref: 704

District Headquarters,  
K A I R U K U.  
23rd August 43.

A.D.D.S.  
HQ. ANGAW.

30/8/43 ✓

PATROL REPORT No. Lak. 11 of 43/44.  
M. G. P. HARDY.

Above Patrol Report is forwarded in duplicate:-

DESERTERS. There are only about 20 deserters now not arrested in the WAIMA and MEKEO sub-districts. These are hard to catch, as they have left their villages, frequent attempts to get them have been and will be made. If Hardy did well to get a score or so of these nuisances on this patrol, as it was his first visit there. The real trouble with the WAIMA and KIVORI natives is that they never went to work before, in peace time to get their tax they bartered cooking pots for sago in the Kerema sub-district and then took the sago per canoe to Port Moresby, where they sold it for cash. We are not "letting up" on these people, they will be worried by patrols till they find the wanted men for us.

CRASHED PLANE. This Liberator referred to under date 15th August and subsequently turned out to be the one that came down near POPO, the old Anglo Persian oil fields near POPO about 35 miles West of APINAIFI. The missing airmen are being searched for from TERAPO by patrols.

D.S. 553/43

*W.H.H.*

Major,  
D. O.

W.H.H. Thompson.

*Conf. W.H.H. 2/9*

*Recs. New return & ADDS.  
10/9/43  
not worked by D.O. file  
20/7/43.*

DS 30/3/15

P/R No. 13/43-44.

STATION:- KAIRUKU.

DISTRICT:- LAKEKAMU

AREA PATROLLED:- WALT EDDIE CREEK

DISTRICTS.

PATROL OFFICER:- LT. C. H. RICH.

DATE:- 24 JUL / 7 AUG. 43

SIR  
3/5



30/2/15 ✓ OK. DS 664/140  
 No 13 LAK of 43/44

REPORT OF A PATROL TO WAU & EDIE CREEK DISTRICTS BY LIEUTENANT  
C. L. H. A. J. D.

Objects of patrol:-

- (1) Inquire into the alleged assault by 4 New Guinea natives on a Sapper of the 9th Field Company at Johnson's Gap. Also the rumour that, as a result of the alleged assault the natives in this section were being worked under Armed guards. These matters were reported by S/Sgt BROWN (ANBAU) who reported from Edie Creek late on the 22 July '43.
- (2) If possible pay the 400 odd natives ex Dobudura for the period worked as casuals and then engage them under Contract of Employment. Have requisitioned that the necessary amount be made available at the Pay Office WAU.
- (3) Inspect members of the R.F.C. stationed along the line.
- (4) General inspection and propaganda patrol.

Saturday 24 July '43.

In company with Lt. Col. Brotherton C.O. of the 9th Field Ambulance, who was proceeding to Wau and Cpl Hancock (ANBAU) who will be replacing Sgt Scott, (now in charge of the natives where the alleged assault took place) left Bulldog at 0930 and travelled per jeep to the mile and a half, which in actual fact is just 4 miles from Bulldog, but only a mile and a half from Base Area. At this point the road was impassable as a bridge had been washed away, and a good deal of the top dressing washed from the road which had been closed until repairs had been effected. At the 5 mile we met Lt. Col. Reinhold C.R.E. en route from Edie Creek, this gentleman who was proceeding to Base area kindly placed his jeep at our disposal and we carried on to Dead Chinaman. W/O Baden-Wales and Cpl Bourke both ANBAU reported. During the afternoon inspected the new site for ANBAU Ada and Native Labour headquarters. A fine new Police Barracks have been erected and some new hospital buildings were in the course of construction. W/O. O'Malley is in charge of the latter but will shortly be replaced by W/O. Mann.

Sunday 25th July '43.

Leaving Dead Chinaman at 0830 hrs the C.R.E. again placing his jeep at our disposal we drove for approximately 2 and a half miles, here we left the jeep and continued per foot arriving at Fox's Camp Cpl Callagher ANBAU 1130 hrs. After an early lunch continued on to arrive at Centre Camp W/O Hyland and Sgt Hagenlocker (med) both of ANBAU reported.

Monday 26 July '43.

Left Centre Camp 0800 hrs and followed up the well graded 14 foot bench, which in places is being widened to 20'. As we passed along the road I met the Parer Bros, W/O. Bannon, W/O. O'Kane, Cpl Mc.Cabe and Cpl Griffiths all of ANBAU who were in charge of labour gangs working along this particular section. All native encountered were in high spirits and were in an entirely different mood from when I saw them on my last visit. At last they can see some results for their labour and are working with a will. There were no complaints and all greeted me with "HANO TAMBANA". They assured me I had a real good road to go over 'Not the same as before'. Arrived at W/O. Crawford's camp 1500 hrs and as the weather appeared very threatening decided to make camp for the night. W/O Crawford reported the death of one New Guinea native HUALONG. From the little information I could obtain it seems the unfortunate fellow lived in fear of being caught and killed by the Japs so ended his miserable existence by hanging himself. The sum of S.L.L. was found on the body and will be placed in account. The body was duly buried by W/O. Sutherland and the grave marked.

Tuesday 27 July '43.

Left Crawford's camp 0830 hrs and arrived at Slow Basin Sgt Gee ANBAU This marks the limit of the Papuan Labour and from this is the labour lines consist of New Guinea natives who after the Japanese came over from Dobudura. After a short spell we found the bleak moss forest mentioned in Report No.1 is now

*mi*  
*WU*  
*DO*  
*30543*  
*G*  
*Carry*  
*for AMBAU*  
*9/9/43*  
*To FELO*  
*Return to*  
*6th ANBAU*  
*7 hrs*  
*14/7/43*  
*Seen*  
*Thanks*  
*18/9*  
*War Diary*  
*14/7/43*



(2)

Tuesday 27 July '43. cont.

Now, but a horrible memory, the timber has been well cleared and the route lays along a well graded bench, a feat which to the ordinary layman appeared an absolute impossibility. At one or two points Sappers were to be seen working with compressors on sheer cliff faces where a false step would mean a fall of anything up to 1000 ft. Such sights certainly make one proud to be associated with such people. How on earth the carriers were able to man handle the compressors, parts of which weighed 250 lbs, around these parts is something beyond me. W/O Crawford who was in charge of the natives bringing this gear admitted that on more than one occasion he had to look away as it seemed any minute there would be an accident. Sufficient to say that the compressors were delivered in the places required and I think those responsible are to be highly praised for their super human efforts. I am not ashamed to admit that in places it took me all my time to safely pilot my own body around and I clung to every available root and notch like grim death. Arrived at Sgt Scott's camp 1230 hrs. Here the labour lines consist of N.G. natives and it was ~~xxxx~~ from this particular section that the 4 natives assaulted the Sapper. As a result of a few inquiries it seems the assault was not of a very serious nature and the Sapper after receiving a few stitches is now quite well again. The 4 culprits together with another 9 'one talks' have deserted and I will endeavour to apprehend them at WAU. The rumour regarding armed guards is absolutely groundless. Sgt Scott is in my opinion not suited as a labour overseer and with Cpl Hancock in charge I do not fear any further trouble of this nature. Continued on and camped the night at Johnson's Gap. Some magnificent views were obtained from Blaney's lookout, Wheelstone's Saddle and O'Kane's lookout. I am informed that the latter is approximately 9000 ft above sea level and forms the highest part of the road.

Wednesday 28 July '43.

Left Johnson's Gap 0830 hrs, for the first couple of miles the going was very hard over boggy ground, this however is being attended to by Sappers and Cpl Schultz with a line of N.G. natives and a few days should see a marked difference. At the 9 mile (Jeep head) we were met by Majors, Vertigan D.O. Mackham and Major Mack D.P.M.B. Col Britherton and myself took the advantage of a lift in one of the returning jeeps and passing over an exceptionally good road arrived at Edie Creek 1230. Reported my arrival to Capt Beer Adjutant R.A.E. 11 Aust Div, who arranged for the Col to continue on to Wau. I decided to remain here and report to Major Vertigan as there are a number of official matters requiring attention.

Thursday 29 July '43.

In company with Major Vertigan and Major Mack left Edie Creek per jeep at 1130 hrs called in at ANGAU sub-station WAU and after lunch continued on to arrive ANGAU N.G. Mackham dist where I stayed as the guest of the D.O. Discussed, and received advice on various official matters.

Friday 30 July '43.

At Bulolo visited R.A.P. and had two teeth extracted.

Saturday 31 July '43.

At Bulolo. Owing to a shortage of petrol in the valley I was unable to obtain transport back to Edie Creek. Shelling and bombing could be plainly heard in the direction of Nassau Bay. Remained the night at Bulolo.

Sunday 1 Aug '43.

Received word that a jeep was going to Wau so availed myself of the opportunity and called at ANGAU (WAU) Enquired at the Pay Office for the money with which to pay the N.G. natives but they advised not receiving any notification. At 1700 hrs left WAU per 3 tonner and arrived at Edie Creek 1900 hrs. A good hour of the journey was undertaken in the dark not a very enviable journey on this particular section of road and it was a relief when Edie Creek was reached.

Monday 2 Aug '43.

As the 13 deserters, including the 4 boys implicated in the assault case were in custody here I made arrangements for them to leave under escort and await my arrival at Johnson's Gap. Accompanied by S/Sgt W. BROWN and Sgt Cox (E.M.A.) inspected the compound and native hospital. Everything was in good order and the surroundings clean and tidy.



(3)

Monday 2 Aug '43. cont.

Lined the N.G. natives ex Dobudara and explained that as I had not received the money at WAN I could not pay them for the period they worked as casuals in the Northern Division, but that their present Contracts of Employment would be dated the 15 Nov '42, which date was given by the DDNL as that on which they commenced work. There were no complaints in fact the majority said they did not want any money as there were no trade stores and they would rather have all their money when their times were finished. Signed on some 60 natives after which I gave a general pep talk, at first I found it rather difficult using pidgin but with a little practice it should not take long to master. As already mentioned in this report most of these natives deserted from the Japanese in the Northern Division and their opinion of our enemies is hardly printable. Naturally people like this form excellent bases for propaganda purposes and needless to say every point was emphasized to the fullest. These natives do not appear as healthy as the Papuans, but after what they have gone through this is not to be wondered at, a month or so however on their present ration scale should show a marked improvement on their health in general. Leaving Edie Creek per jeep proceeded almost to Johnson's Gap before continuing per foot. En route inspected and signed on the N.G. natives controlled by Spr Edgell 2/16 Field Coy. This Sapper appears very capable and there were no complaints from either party. Moved on a short distance and camped with Cpl Schultz ANZAC for the night.

Tuesday 3 Aug '43.

Inspected and signed on 95 N.G. natives under the control of Cpl Schultz. As is the usual practice before dismissing the line they were given a lecture and the situation in general explained. Sgt Cox S.M.A. who had accompanied the patrol administered Carbon Tetrachloride to the entire line followed with salts and they were given the day off. Sgt Cox intends carrying out this treatment along the entire line as a prevention against hookworm. Leaving Cpl Schultz continued on to the 13 mile where I instructed Cpl Hancock to fall his line in. Here again the natives were inspected signed on etc., inquired into the alleged assault on Cpl Searle. It appears the native in question were employed on a carry line and unlike the Papuans the N.G. natives are much slower at such work. On the particular day in question they had taken some 6 hours to come 4 miles. Cpl Searle who was in charge of the line was naturally urging them along and it seems flicked one of the lads with a stick, this boy XZ then picked up a pick handle and struck the Cpl on the back of the head. Three other N.G. natives intended joining in but on seeing some sappers coming to the Cpls assistance they thought better of it and all took to their heels.. In my opinion it was a case of inexperience, Cpl Searle who strikes me as a very capable man has only had experience with Papuan so would naturally find the N.G. natives a bit different. As already mentioned these N.G. natives were with the Japs and to punish them on this occasion would I think do more harm than good, after all Cpl Searle was in the wrong in striking the boy at all even though it was only of a trivial nature. The parties were severely cautioned and just to make sure there is no trouble of this nature I am transferring the natives to another line. Cpl Hancock has now taken this line over from Sgt Scott and I am confident there will be no more trouble. Leaving the 13 mile continued on to Seccombe's Camp Sgt Cox (ANZAC). During the afternoon inspected Sgt Cox's line, paid off and re-organized some of the Papuans also signed on one N.G. native. No complaints. Experienced a bitterly cold night.

Wednesday 4 Aug '43.

Left Seccombe's Camp 0600 hrs and arrived at Fox's Gap 1000 hrs. W/O Petherland (ANZAC) reported all well. Inspected the lines and quarters and found everything in order. Continued on a few hundred yards and had lunch with W/O Crawford (ANZAC) as usual there were no complaints and this W/O's lines were neat and tidy, W/O Crawford is an excellent overseer and in my opinion worthy of promotion. Signed on 3 N.G. natives who have been with Crawford since hostilities began. After lunch we continued on to W/O O'Hanes' camp, en route met Lt. Col Wilson acting C.M. and American Major and Capt Whitehouse. Arrived at O'Hanes' camp approximately 1530 hrs

(4)

Wednesday 4 Aug'43 cont:-

W/O. O'Kane keeps an excellent labour line and camp and even though all his experience was gained on the N.G. side he is very much at home with the Papuans whom he admires greatly for the work they have done, to use his own expression "They'll do us" is certainly a compliment as he insists on a good hard days work. O'Kane's ability to get the best out of the Papuans proves that the language problem is not so difficult for men of experience. At knock off time I lined his entire gang numbering 96 and one and all were happy and contented without a complaint of any sort.

Thursday 5 Aug'43.

Left O'Kane's and continuing down a well graded road called and inspected the labour controlled by W/O. Bannon and the Parer Bros. W/O.R. Parer was paraded and cautioned regarding a breach of the censorship regulations separate report on this matter to Adm W.O. Leaving the main road we took a short cut and arrived at Centre Camp W/O. Lyland 1200hrs. During the afternoon inspected the labour quarters and also the labourers, "all well". All off is natives who were under multiple contracts and re-engaged them under individual contracts of employment. Sgt Kagenlocker who is the ANCAV Medical representative at this camp is certainly a real live wire at makes a practice of visiting all the other near by camps at least once a week. He is a most obliging person and nothing is a trouble which is a great asset in his particular job.

Friday 6 Aug'43.

Leaving Centre Camp, called at Sgt Rossiter's camp but found this W.O.C. absent, I regret to report that there was considerable room for improvement here and Rossiter will be duly informed. Continued on to Fox's Camp where I met Sgt Rossiter and informed him of my findings and issued instructions that the camp was to have a general spring cleaning and particular attention was to be paid to latrines. Fox's camp also leave a lot to be desired the W.O.C. in charge here Cpl Gallagher is certainly not suited for the job and since his arrival here has been suffering very indifferent health most of the time being spent in bed with fever. I strongly recommend that he be transferred and will advise the ADML accordingly. Continuing on I met the C.R.E. Lt Col Reinhold at the 15 mile he was inspecting the road after a short spell I boarded a jeep and continued on to Dead Chinaman. During the evening discussed the possibilities of leave for the labourers with the C.R.E. Apparently in approximately 2 weeks time most of the manual work will be completed and only a maintenance gang required, if this is so I intend arranging a montas leave for all those who have been employed on the road. If possible they will proceed in village lots of say one to 200. Some of the natives have been employed in this area for almost 2 years and as the climate and general conditions is something they have not been used to I'm afraid that if leave is not granted there will be numerous desertions. They seem to have it fixed in the back of their minds that once the road is completed they will be granted leave. I have impressed on all natives in this district that time means nothing these days, its not a case of whether a boys contract is expired or not, and that if it has expired he will be paid off and re-engaged until such time as it is considered safe for them to return to their villages. I have however informed them that where ever possible they will be granted leave for a certain period to return and see their people.

Saturday 7 Aug'43.

Left Dead Chinaman and proceeding per Jeep arrived at Bulldog where Cpl Scott AKPAUK (dist) reported. En route met Lieut Marlay who was on his way to Dead Chinaman.

*Robert J. ...*

.....A.D.C.



GENERAL REPORT.

It is very pleasing to note that since my last patrol through this area things in general have improved considerably and there is a much clearer understanding between the overseers and the natives. As reported during my last patrol most of the overseers are N.G. men while the natives are Papuan, they now seem to have 'grown' into each others ways and the result is excellent. With the exception of the one assault case (and incidentally the person assaulted was not an ASSAU man) there were no complaints whatever and the natives all appeared healthy, happy and contented. The arrival of some 300 N.G. natives improved matters and made it possible to release the Papuans for work in the warmer climates, unfortunately the N.G. natives have since been re-called and once again the Papuans have had to return to the bitterly cold climate which they detest. All being well it should not be very long before most of the annual work on the road will be completed and only maintenance gangs required. When this time arrives permanent camps can be erected at suitable points and the labour taken to and from their places of employment per track.

I had intended paying the N.G. natives for the period they had worked as casuals and the N.G. division but as the money was not sent to W.A.I. I was unable to do so. It appears it was just as well as the natives themselves expressed the opinion that they did not want the money, there was no means of spending it and it would only get lost. Instead their present contracts of employment have been back dated to the date they commenced work with the Allies. I strongly advocate that a trade store be established somewhere in this area, the only two trade stores in the Lakekamu Dist are at Kerema and Lairuku each 3 to 4 days return journey from the Lakekamu River. There is no amount of money along the line and goodness only knows how much there is in the villages on the coast. I feel sure that the establishment of a trade store would more than pay for itself, it would also keep the money circulating and have a very beneficial effect on the natives who are continually asking to buy things. Such items as mosquito nets, blankets etc., would not remain in the store any time.

All members of the N.F.C. stationed along the line were found to be carrying out their duties in a very efficient manner and I am of the opinion that their presence gives the natives confidence and also tends to stop desertions. Separate reports on each man will be forwarded to N.F.C. headquarters at the appropriate times.

*Paul H. Dick*

.....

DS 30/3/16

P/R No. 14/43-44.

STATION:- KAIRUKU.

DISTRICT:- LAKEKAMU

AREA PATROLLED:- ONONGE - KAMBISE

PATROL OFFICER:- WOI H F JACKA

DATE:- 26 JUL/6 AUG 43.

P/R  
315



REPORT ON PATROL MADE TO ONONG  
TO INVESTIGATE TROUBLE BETWEEN  
KILAPE NATIVES AND SPOTTERS

LAK 14 of 51  
43/44

BY W.O.11 H.F.JACKA -

30/3/1944

GOILALA 1/43-44

MONDAY JULY 26th

Under instructions from the D.O. KAIRUKU, to proceed to ONONG and investigate the above disturbance, left GOILALA at 0830 hrs and proceeded along the graded track to SPALDY'S GAP and from there to KOFOGORO (Ivane). Had intended to go to KOSIPI but the weather was bad and at ARIOME heavy rain started to fall and I made camp there. Arrived at 1330 hrs and slept in the Mission house.

TUESDAY JULY 27th

Left ARIOME at 0730 and after fifteen minutes walk, encountered the graded road again and continued to the terminus. From here through the bush to KOSIPI barracks arriving at 1030. I had previously sent a Policeman to VOITAPE to recruit carriers and bring them to here, so, with a change of carriers, pushed on through the swamp, which was as unpleasant as usual, and reached VOITAPE at 1430. Slept in the Mission building.

WEDNESDAY JULY 28th

Got away at 0730 and with good travelling on the Mission road reached URUN at 1130. Much cleaning of roads going on here and it is a pleasure to walk on them. Several complaints lodged by the Village Constable, so I decided to camp there. Spent the afternoon with C's.R.M. and listening to minor complaints. Tried to find out something about the KILAPE business, but no one seemed to know anything about it. Slept in the Mission house.

THURSDAY JULY 29th

Left URUN at 0715 and proceeded per the graded road for one hour to the ONONG bridge. After a short spell on to the KANTIS villages where I was met by the two Village Constables who reported all well in their tribes. From there to the Police camp arriving at 1330. Was met there by the Spotters who gave me the general outline of the trouble. During the afternoon I inspected the camp area and the Detachment. Slept in the Officers residence.

FRIDAY JULY 30th )

SATURDAY JULY 31st )

SUNDAY JULY/AUGUST 1st )

At the Police Camp

MONDAY AUGUST 2nd

Investigation complete, left the Police Camp on route for ONONG where to meet Fr. DUBUY and discuss the KANOSIA road question with him. Arrived at the bridge and was very pleased to find a horse there for me. From the bridge up the long and fairly steep road to ONONG where I was met by Frs. DUBUY and RODUIT. At the request of the nursing Sister I inspected about forty natives who all have ulcers in a very advanced stage. I was informed that this outbreak is spreading and many people are not coming for treatment. The Mission is doing all it can to check this, but their of medicine is very low. Under separate cover I am forwarding a requisition for medical supplies for this Mission Station.

G. W. JACKA  
15/7/44  
New diary  
started 10/7/44



(Patrol Report cont.)

TUESDAY AUGUST 3rd.

At the request of the Mission, I called the three Vill Consts. and instructed them to construct two buildings to be used as Hospitals and also ordered them to bring all people to be treated. During the morning I inspected the CHINCHONA plantation and also had a talk with the boys who have been signed on to look after it. A place is now being cleared and fenced ready for the transplanting. C.N.M. was held during the afternoon. I had intended to proceed down the KAROSIA road with Fr. DUBUY, but I received a radio from GOILALA telling me of a tribal war near KERAU. Assuming this was serious, I prepared to leave the next day for GOILALA, and my arrangements to go to KAROSIA road and return through WANE were sadly disrupted.

WEDNESDAY AUGUST 4th

Left ONORGE at 0800 per horseback, down to the bridge and along the graded road to URUN. Had a short spell there and pushed on to WOITAPE arriving at 1600 hrs. Slept in the Mission House.

THURSDAY AUGUST 5th

From WOITAPE through the KOSIPI swamp to the barracks. Heavy rain here and had to make camp.

FRIDAY AUGUST 6th

Left KOSIPI at 0730 and proceeded to IVANA arriving at noon. After a short spell continued the journey to GOILALA arriving at 1500 hrs in light rain.

-----  
INVESTIGATION

It would appear that the only reason for this trouble, is the KILLAPES' objection to a little carrying, and the presence of the Police Camp, thereby curbing their desires to remain free and to please themselves. The story as told to me is as follows; A small pig strayed from its village which is close to the spotter's camp. Assuming that it had been killed by the spotters, and elderly woman was instructed to proceed to the camp and present the spotters with the charm representing "marching orders". This was in the form of a bunch of very poor class bananas. When questioned, she replied that the people had made up their minds that the spotters had to go, as they were interfering with their private lives. The request was of course refused, and in the late afternoon, some fifty natives came to within fifty yards of the camp and began questioning their right in being there.

The natives were carrying their axes and telling the spotters in no uncertain terms to get out---or else. Sgt Marshall fired one shot in the air but the people remained there. He then sent word to the Police camp and Reg No. 936 Sgt. API-AKIA came up. On his arrival, the people dispersed, and apart from coming with peace offerings, they were not seen again. When I arrived there were quite a lot of people waiting to see me and they seemed sorry over what had happened. I questioned Village Constables AVIDE and IVORO as to the ring leaders and got the names of the three concerned. One arrest was made and the other two are to be arrested when the opportunity presents itself. It is difficult country in which to catch anyone but Sgt API has been told to watch out for them.

There were only a few people mixed up in this. It is interesting to see that the three ringleaders are chiefs and the others probably followed them because of this. Whilst here, I took the opportunity of purchasing the land on which the Police camp and the spotters house stands. I also had the KILLAPES there for two days putting a fence around it so that in future there will be no reason for saying that their pigs have come in.



(Cont.)

I know the KILAPE natives well, having been stationed there for some months. They are a continual source of worry both to us and the Mission. In view of what has happened I would ask that Vill. Const, IVORO be dismissed as he played a very active part in this disturbance. In his place I recommend that his elder brother, and therefor a more powerful chief, KO FORIG be appointed in his place. I know this KO FORIG and he is a good type for the position.

The lower end of KILAPE is fair, and had no part in this, but the top end is bad and even IVORO's people have asked that he be dismissed. Peace has been made with the spotters, and later, with the arrest of the two men and the appointment of a new Vill. Const. I do not think that anything of this kind will occur again.

Advice has just been received, that one of the two wanted men has been arrested.

---

( Cont. )

The Following members of the Armed Constabulary accompanied me on this Patrol.

Reg.No.	323	A.C.	KAIRARAKA
"	"	"	IMANGA
"	1079	"	AILA
"	1353	"	ASNA
"	1701	"	HAVIRA
"	1873	"	ABODA
"	2199	"	UVENAI
"	"	"	SIBURE

The conduct of these Police was good and I have nothing in the way of disobedience to report. Some of the older Police are invaluable, as often they gain information that would not, ordinarily be conveyed to me.

-----  
GENERAL INFORMATION

(1)

Rest Houses

The only one of these seen was at KOSIPI. It is in good order and food is growing close to the site.

(2)

Roads and bridges

From GOILALA to IVANA is graded and has been recently cleaned. From IVANA the road continues for one hour to it's termination and thence by bush track to KOSIPI barracks, through the swamp and to WOITARE where the Mission road is again encountered. I would point out that the road through the swamp has been surveyed and should be complete early next year. We will then have a graded road from GOILALA to ONONGE. The roads were in good order when I passed, having just recently been cleared. Only ~~at~~ one bridge was crossed, and this was at ONONGE. This is a suspension bridge and strong enough for me to cross on horseback.

(3)

Agriculture

Food is plentiful in the ONONGE district and new plantings are going on all the time. Sweet Potatoes, Yams, Sugar Cane etc are the most common.

-----



DS 30/3/17

P/R No. 15 /43-44.

STATION:- KAIRUKU

DISTRICT:- LAKE KAMU

AREA PATROLLED:- MEKEO

PATROL OFFICER:- LT G.P. HARDY

DATE:- 24 AUG/1 SEP 43.

92  
3/5

Report of patrol by:- Lieut. Hardy S.P. F/O Kairuki.

To. M E K E O.

Date left Station. 24th Aug. 43. Date returned. 1st Sept. 43. (8 days)

- Purposes of patrol.
1. Arrest of deserters in the Mekeo.
  2. General inspection of roads and villages in the Mekeo.
  3. Render assistance to W/O Williams with the Rice Culture and roads.
  4. Inspection of Rabuna drone.

Patrol accompanied by:- Mr. Martnett Int. W.S. forces, attached A.N.G.A.I

R.P.G. 4.

CARRIERS. 16.

Last patrol to MEKSO made by:- W/O Price in June 43.

24th August 1943.

Having received instructions from D.O., obtained rations and carriers, the patrol set off from the station 9.30 a.m. and proceeded to the N. West of the island. There boarded canoes which were waiting as pre arranged, and crossed to Pimupaka. A very slow trip. The patrol then proceeded along the beach to Mai Era plantation, arrived 1.45 p.m. Met Gilbert English, half-caste in charge, and inspected the labour. English stated that the boys had been working well. On completion of inspection departed 3 p.m. for Boreina by way of plantation road, and bush track, arrived 4 p.m. and made camp. Inspected village which was a little out of order. However this was soon attended to.

25th August.

Gave instructions to V.C. & Councillors re village, deserters and tracks. Departed 8.30 a.m. for Inawae by native track which was good, but a little over grown. Inspected village there which was up to standard. Then to Mawi and Aipeana which were likewise inspected. The former satisfactory, the latter very untidy. The Aipeana people were given extra work as they had not carried out their duties. From there to Baipa, arrived 1.30 p.m. and made camp.



fair. Called V.C's and Councillors together and discussed matters village work to be carried out and deserters. In the evening visited the mission. The Father's and Sister's there were most hospitable as usual.

26th August.

Minor court cases heard and dismissed. Discussed matters with V.C's and Councillors from Aipeana and Amo Amo villages re tracks etc. Throughout the day carried on with general work. Afternoon checked up on Aipeana village which was most untidy when inspected the previous day. This time it was satisfactory.

27th August.

Minor court case heard and settled. Departed 9.45 am, proceeded along native track in fair condition for Amo Amo. Deserter arrested and sent to Kairua. From there to Kairua, arrived noon. Track fair as little rain had fallen. Village inspected and found up to standard. Village matters discussed and settled with V.C and Councillors. Then to Ngagaifua. Track good, had been cleaned by village people before my arrival. Village inspected and found satisfactory. Then proceeded to Inavauni, arrived 1.30 p.m. and made camp. Village inspected but not satisfactory. Instructions given to have same cleaned up immediately. Road from Amo Amo to Inavauni rather muddy, but not under water as it generally is as very little rain had fallen of late. Village matters discussed with V.C and Councillors. There were no court case.

28th August.

Heard and settled minor court case brought from another village. Village checked and found satisfactory. Departed 10 a.m. and proceeded along a muddy road until striking the St. Joseph river. Having crossed this fast running river without any mishaps the patrol proceeded to Bebeo, arrived noon. Road very muddy. Inspected village which was neat and tidy. Discussed matters in general with V.C and Councillors. This village had done very well with their rice crop having harvested 99 bags for the season. It is now ~~not~~ stored and waiting for transport when the roads improve. Met Father Louis of the Catholic Mission there and spent a while with him. Departed 1.45 p.m. and pushed across the grass flats to Oriropetana, arrived 3 p.m. and made camp. Road between Bebeo and Oriropetana good as not much rain of late had fallen. Village inspected. Grounds good and houses neat and tidy. Village matters discussed with Councillors. V.C. on duty at Kairua.

29th August.

Final instructions given to Councillors re deserters who may pass through on their way to other villages. Departed 9 a.m. proceeded along main road to Jesubaibua where the Rice Mill is situated. Road fair. W/O Williams who is in charge of the Mokeo Rice Mill away on business at Port Moresby. Mr. Martnett was shown over the mill by Peter Teranto half caste, assistant to W/O Williams. Inspected village which was very neat and tidy. Road newly constructed between Oriropetana and Jesubaibua taking shape. Then to Inawaia, arrived noon and made camp with Sgt. Burke who is on road building at the moment. Road fair.



29th Aug. cont.

-3-

Afternoon went to Eboa by push bike. Inspected village. The grounds were excellent, and the houses very neat and tidy. Called the people together and gave them the war news, but impressed upon them that although the news was good we all had to keep our back into the job until it was all over. If these people are told once in a while how the news is in general, and that they are all playing a part in the war effort, they seem to take more interest in their various jobs. On my return from Eboa inspected Inawaia village which was up to standard. Mr. Hartnett and self visited the mission in the evening, and as usual the Sisters and Fathers there were most hospitable. Sgt. Burke very sick with gastric fever. The mission was taking care of him.

30th August.

Left A.C. Hove to arrest 3 boys who had been dodging work for some time. Gave instructions to V.E. re deserters and village matters. Forwarded 8 prisoners under escort to Kairuku. Fresh carriers obtained, departed 9.30 a.m. for Inawabui, arrived 11.30 a.m. Inspected village which was not up to standard. People called together and given instructions re the roads, barracks and village which had to be kept in order. War news was also given them. Departed noon for Arapokina a Catholic Mission Station, arrived 1.45 p.m. and camped with them. Road fair, but over grown. Instructions had been given to Bioto people to have it cleared.

31st August.

Departed 8.15 a.m. on horseback for Kubuna. Stopped at Wanono another mission station and then straight to Ebuia, arrived 12.30 p.m. Stayed awhile at the mission, inspected the dromo which is in fair condition and departed per push bike for Wanono 2.30 p.m. arrived 3 p.m. Handed push bike to Father in charge there which had been lent to me by Kubuna Mission. Departed 3.15 p.m. and for about 1 1/2 hours proceeded along the main road, and then took a short cut to Arapokina, arrived 5.40 p.m. The road for the most part is in fair condition, but in places is very stoney where the rainfall has washed away the earth.

1st September.

Morning spent at Mission waiting for engine of mission launch to be fixed. As it was not fixed by 2 p.m. Mr. Hartnett and self started off by canoe. However we were soon picked up by the launch which had been put in order soon after we had left, and proceeded direct to Kairuku, arrived 5.30 p.m.

Police on patrol:- KAVO, WABEGA, KAIERA and EWAI.

KAVO, he coming from the Mekeo is a useful policeman in that area. His work good, and conduct very fair. Was left in Inawaia to arrest 3 boys, AI'I AIA, AINA'AU AIA, AKO A'U. (Ref. 30th Aug.)

WABEGA, a good policeman.

KAIERA, work fair, conduct fair.

EWAI, " " " "



DEERTERS.

There are still some outstanding deserters to be arrested. On this patrol only one was arrested. Most of the deserters being search-ed for now have been outstanding for some time, and are very hard to catch. The present racket with most of these is to go to Port Moresby where they obtain a job from the soldiers, and receive high rates of pay. Once these boys get to Port they of course are very hard to trace. Others go to far distant villages taking their wives with them. These again are hard to trace. However at the moment there are not many outstanding.

ROADS.

At present the roads in the Mekeo are only fair, some of course being better than others. Of late there hasn't been very much rain, and thus the roads are not under water as they generally are, but just the same are muddy and soft for the most part. Some of the lesser used roads have become overgrown because of the shortage of labour. Normally these roads are cleared by the village people, but now of course all the fit boys are away working on the various lines of communication, and the women throughout the year have been working on their rice crops. At the Mekeo Rice Mill of course there is standing labour to keep the main roads in good order, but of course they cannot manage all the roads. New roads near the Rice Mill have started and they are taking shape quite well. Owing to the shortage of labour all the roads cannot be kept in perfect condition, but now that the rice crops have all finished the village people will be able to start and clear many of them. During the patrol instructions were given to many villages to start on the roads again.

RICE.

All villages except Inawaia and Ebeo did very well with their rice crops this year. In Inawaia and Ebeo the floods ruined the crops. Now all the rice is stored in the various villages waiting for transport. As there is quite a lot of rice to be transported it will mean quite a lot of traffic on the roads, and as they are not hard enough yet it will have to stay put for the time being. W/O Williams who is in charge of the Rice Mill was away at Port Moresby on business. Sgt. Burke at Inawaia stated that the labour was working well. Burke who is assistant to Williams is at the moment on road making as all the rice has been harvested.

KUBUNA DROME.

Inspected Kubuna drome and found same in fair condition. At the moment the grass is fairly short, and is dry. However instructions were given to the Kani people to keep the centre of the drome cleared and the grass cut short. Also to clear another 50 to 100 yds at each end and fell the trees for a 100 yds or so.

MAI WAI PLANTATION. Labour there was inspected. Gilbert English in charge there stated that the boys had been working well. There were a few minor complaints, but these were soon settled. Coconuts are getting very scarce.

*G. H. English*  
Lieut.



No. 746

DISTRICT HQ.  
KAIRUKU  
3 Sept. 43.

DC 7752

DADDS  
ANGAU.

PATROL REPORT NO. 15 of '43/'44. By LIEUT. G. P. HARDY.

1. This patrol report forwarded in duplicate, of the patrol around the MEKEO villages by Lieut. Hardy, accompanied by Mr. William C. Hartnett, U.S. Intelligence Service.
2. **DESSERTERS.** The sophisticated MEKEO seems to be in great demand at the present moment as a domestic servant. I think that possible quite a number of those we are trying to catch will eventually be found in somebody's kitchen in PORT MORESBY. I have sent a list of those who may be there, according to Lieut. Hardy's information, to the D.O. MORESBY.
3. **RICE.** The roads are in a terrible state due to the unprecedented rain at this time of the year, consequently I hope that the problem of getting the rice from the villages to the mill at IESUBAIBUA will be solved by water transport, if W.O. II Williams, now in Port Moresby, can bring out another launch for the punt, to work on the ST. JOSEPH or AUNGABUNGA, near whose banks all the rice growing villages lie.

W.H.H. Thompson

MAJOR  
D.O.  
W.H.H. THOMPSON.

Camp for M.A.H. 15/9

War Diary return 7/9/43

10/10  
ON



DS 30/3/18

P/R No. 16/43-44 (KEREMA 4/43-44)

STATION:- KAIRUKU.

DISTRICT:- LAKEKAMU.

AREA PATROLLED:- VILLAGES WEST OF KEREMA

↳ DROKOLU and up VAILALA RIVER to KARIAYA

PATROL OFFICER:- LT. M. W. BERGIN

DATE:- 14 JUL/21 AUG 43.

S/R  
3/6

PATROL            REPORT

by

Lieut. M. W. Bergin

**PATROL TO:** Villages west of Kerema as far as Orokolo  
and up Vailala River to Yariava.

---

**Left Station:** 14th. July 1943.  
**returned**        21st. August 1943.

---

**Objects of Patrol:** (1) Inventories for Production Control  
Board of Araimiri and Huiva Plantations.  
(2) Inspection of Villages  
(3) Arrest of deserters.  
(4) Recruiting.  
(5) Payments to relatives from deceased estates.

---

**Patrol accompanied by** (a) Five R.F.C.  
(b) Average 19 carriers.

---

**Last Patrol to area:**  
(a) District Services Staff - M. W. Bergin - 24/5/43 to 8/7/43  
(b) Medical Assistant - Sgt. Jacobsen - 7/5/43 to 22/5/43.

---



PATROL REPORT - KEREMA No. 4/43-44

Lieut. M. W. Bargin.

1943

- 14th. July. Left Kerema Station at 0900 hrs. with five police and 21 carriers and Half-Caste Silva, the latter bound for Kikori. Supplies for Mr. H. Coghill of Orokolo. Arrived Huiva 1400 hrs. in heavy rain. My instructions were to await arrival of an American pilot who had crash-landed at Erika Beach, and to see that Huiva Beach was cleared for an expected rescue plane.
- 15th. July. At Huiva. Incessant rain. Neither pilot nor plane arrived. Sent Silva on with Constable Kaipu. Making inventory and plans of buildings etc. at Araimiri plantation for Production Control Board.
- 16th. July. At Huiva. Incessant rain. Neither pilot nor plane arrived. Making inventory and plans of buildings etc. of Huiva Plantation for the Board. Arrested one deserter at Keuru and heard of another having passed through.
- 17th. July. At Huiva. Heavy rain. Sent deserter to Kerema under escort. Also forwarded inventories etc. of Araimiri and Huiva to A. D. O. At 1415 hrs. Tiger both landed but no sign yet of the American.
- 18th. July. At Huiva. After re-fuelling, both took off to search beaches westerly for the American. At 1500 hrs. it returned with a passenger who was another American airman who had crashed, the other having been picked up by a launch at Vailala.
- 19th. July. To Belepa via Koilaka, Molau, Poiva and Sul, inspecting villages and contacting councillors and constables. All were reasonably clean, considering the absence of their menfolk, but babas and pig-fences are falling into disrepair. The road through this area is in poor condition and I instructed the old people remaining to do what they can about it. There were no complaints and no disputes.
- 20th. July. To Vaiviri. I had intended reaching Orokolo and had sent word for canoes to meet me at Maira but floods in the river had washed them downstream and this caused a delay.
- 21st. July. To Orokolo and delivered Mr. Coghill's supplies. Obtained an interpreter - Pove/Mallarivila - through Revd. Dewdney, with knowledge of English, Motu, Orokolo and Vailala River languages. Made payments to relatives of deceased natives.
- 22nd. July. At Orokolo. Unavailing search for a deserter. Met village councillors and constables, discussed village matters and gave latest war news. They appear to be somewhat interested in the war progress in Europe but much more so in the local conflict with Japan. Names of distant places and large numbers of troops etc. are, of course, merely vague terms to them; but they are puzzled as to why we take enemy prisoners instead of killing them.
- 23rd. July. Inspected village group and found them clean and tidy. Took over and packed some tools etc. from Mr. Coghill which are required at Kerema and not being used by him.
- 24th. July. To Vaiviri, inspection of villages en route and the plantation labour.
- 25th. July. Left Vaiviri 0800 hrs. by two canoes (8 paddlers each) up the Vailala River, which was in flood, reaching Upoia 1745 hrs. On the way made payment to a relative of a deceased native.
- 26th. July. Left Upoia 0815 hrs. and continued upstream, reaching Iohiki 1720 hrs. Heavy rain all day and river in flood. Visited small hamlets en route.



A small band of Kukukukus have taken up residence at Lohiki because - so they say - their own village was raided by neighbouring people. One of them could speak a little English. Instructions were given for the rest-house to be repaired and a new police-house to be erected in place of the present one which had been allowed to collapse; also a pig-proof fence around the rest-house.  
Gave a short talk on the war.

- 27th. July. Up Vailala River. Left Lohiki 0700 hrs. and arrived at Paku at 1730 hrs.  
Visited small hamlets and met councillors and constables, making enquiries concerning some adultery allegations at Hepa, Mukurara and Paku. A native dance was in progress at the latter village and the place was brilliantly illuminated - with kerosene lamps (!)  
Instructions were given for the rest-house and police quarters at Paku to be repaired and cleaned up.  
Short talk on the war progress and the work of the natives.  
Two recruits offered their services.
- 28th. July. Left Paku and proceeded up the river, reaching Kariava at 1200 hrs. where I enjoyed the hospitality of Mr. Temple Watts and Sgt. Arrowsmith. During the afternoon I was shown over the drilling plant by W/O. Smith.  
No native labour problems.
- 29th. July. Left Kariava 1045 hrs. and canoed downstream, reaching Paku at 1245 and Lohiki at 1630 hrs., visiting the tiny hamlets between Kariava and Paku.
- 30th. July. Left Lohiki 0650 and reached Paku 1530 hrs where a charge of adultery was heard and proven, and seven more recruits - over from the Purari for the dance - offered their services. Instructions concerning rest-house being attended to.
- 31st. July. Departed Paku 0750 hrs. and reached Kariava 1220 hrs. where the afternoon was spent investigating some native matters. Took delivery of a safe-hand package.
- 1st. August From Kariava at 0645, picked up recruits and prisoner at Paku 1130 hrs. and reached Lohiki 1530 hrs.  
Heard charges of assault and adultery which were proven and one of sorcery which was dismissed.  
Village people carrying out repairs to rest-house as ordered.  
Pte. Ova (PIB) whose leave had expired joined the party.
- 2nd. August From Lohiki at 0715, reached Vaiviri 1600 hrs.  
The m.v. "Vailala" arrived just ahead of me, having brought Sgt. Jaensch (medical assistant) and Cpl. Wearne from Korema. Pte. K. M. Lynch, manager of Vaiviri and Maira plantations, seriously ill with Blackwater Fever and being attended to by Revd. Dewdney and Mr. Coghill. Information concerning Lynch's illness sent immediately to A.D.C., Korema; and police to Vailala East to have beach cleared for ambulance plane. I assumed control of the plantations.
- 3rd. August ) General supervision of Vaiviri and Maira Plantations,  
to ) returns for Production Control Board, etc.  
19th. Aug. ) on the 5th. at 2130 hrs. Pte. Lynch died and was buried at Orokolo Mission Cemetery at 1600 hrs. on the 6th. by Revd. Dewdney, Sgt. Jaensch, Mr. Coghill and self attending.  
On the 7th. arrested one deserter.  
On the 12th. Constable Kaipu, after being reprimanded for being late on parade and chewing betel-nut during hours of duty, deserted and went towards Kikori district.  
On the 13th. I visited Bolepa from Maira. Repairs to mission buildings are being carried out as I had previously instructed. On return to Vaiviri I found that Lieut. L.J. Kneeskern, of 8th. Photo Sqdn., 5th. Bomber Command, had arrived by canoe from Kariava whence he had been taken by natives after wandering in the Upper Vailala country for ten days. Word of his arrival was sent to Korema; and he proceeded to Huiva on the 15th. for transport to Moraby.  
At 1700 hrs. on the 17th. W/O. M. W. Brig's arrived per



Messrs. Mitch and Crisp arrived by same vessel on investigation of the properties; also Sgt. Burke (ANZAC) en route Orakolo.

20th. Aug. Left Vaiviri and arrived Huiva.  
Inspected beach. A "Catalina" had crashed there on the 16th. Part of the aircraft is in the sea below low water mark, but one engine and wing is half buried on the beach in front of the house. Although there are long stretches of beach suitable for landings east and west of the derelict, the wreckage is a menace; but I can see no way of removing it without adequate gear and labour.  
Very little work in the clearing of logs and debris easterly along the beach at high water mark had been done by Constable Beri and his staff since I passed through, and I recommend that he be severely reprimanded.

21st. Aug. To Kerema.  
Met Capt. Deland making medical inspection of Mei'i villages.

REPORT ON CONSTABLES ACCOMPANYING PATROL.

- Constable HAVAKIA: Fair average intelligence; generally obedient and diligent but needs "smartening-up"; was very useful on the Vailala River.
- " TABUAILOGG: This Kokubuku policeman is very keen, possesses some intelligence and seems eager to learn. He is smart in his appearance, and obedient.
- " KALPU: A fairly new recruit he appeared to be a promising lad but I found him to be lacking in interest in his work and with conceited ideas of a policeman's position.
- " INUA: Quite keen and obedient and possesses fair average intelligence.
- " TUBIAL: This policeman was returned to station shortly after commencement of patrol and I was therefore unable to gauge his worth.

*M. W. Bering*  
Lieut.  
M. W. Bering.

*Duplicate*

11 SEP 1918

RECEIVED  
MILITARY  
9 Sept. 18.

D.S. 779/08

4162

30/3/18

53

REC'D  
ARRAN.

PATROL REPORT - No. 10 LAR. of 43/44.

LIEUT. M. W. BERGIN - PATROL OFFICER

1. This was a routine patrol well carried out.
2. The dismissal of No. 1044 Constable KUPI, has been recommended to CO. KPC.

*W.H.H. Thompson*

MAJOR  
D.O.  
W.H.H. Thompson.

*"G" copy for A/Adjutant  
15/9*

*War Diary  
& returns. No. 10.43  
12*



DS 30/3/19

P/R No. 17/43-44

STATION:- KAIRUKU.

DISTRICT:- LAKEKAMU.

AREA PATROLLED:- BULLDOG - MANGABI-A

PATROL OFFICER:- LT A MONTGOMERY

DATE:- 21 AUG / 1 SEPT 43.

No copy S.R.

Duplicate in  
Staff DS/783-43

21 SEP 1943

Patrol Report

4161

No. LAN 17 of 23/44  
MS 780  
1943  
D.O.  
7/9/43

Report of Patrol by. A. Montgomery Lieut Patrol Officer.

No. Bulldog and MANGOBI-A Area.

Date left Station. 21.8.43.

Date returned. 1.9.43.

Purpose of Patrol.

(a) To obtain information and arrest murderers.

(b) Recover Constables rifles.

Patrol accompanied by;-

European Personnel. On the 28.8.43.

Opl. Scott

Patrol Officer.

R.P.C. (No only) .....12.....

Native Carriers. (No only) ...15.....

Previous Patrol Report Ref. Map. ....

Last Patrol to area made by;-

(a) District Services Field Staff on..15th. May. 19/41. J. Miller. P.O. N.C.A.

(b) Medical Assistant on. .Nil.....

*See also papers  
on W/S file  
" Natives -  
Disturbances  
& Murders."*

A. Montgomery Lieut  
A. Montgomery, Patrol Officer.



PATROL REPORT

19th Aug. 43.

On instruction by radio from Lt Rich A.D.O to proceed to Bulldog with nine Armed Constables, I left Terapo Sub-Strn on the 21st Aug by barge. Mr Rich met me on the river and told me that two armed Constables had been killed at a KUKA -KUKA garden in the vicinity of the 12 mile camp. I was to take over the patrol and endeavour to recover the rifles belonging to the murdered Police and arrest the murderers, if, as it was reasonable the Natives had all ran away to the bush I was to return within ten days.

19th until the 24th was spent on the river in transit.

24th Aug. 43.

Arrived Bulldog and left same day for the 12 mile camp. Cpl Scott who was to report to me was at another camp making inquiries. At 3 P.M. of the same day Cpl Scott arrived and reported, that there had been some trouble with a party of KUKA-KUKAS and one young Native had been shot, and that he Scott had brought the Native to the hospital. W/O Mann Medical orderly in charge went to the hospital at once to receive the patient. W/O Mar. 's report appended.

25th.

Cpl Scott arrived at 8-30 A.M with a party of KUKA-KUKAS, those Natives were questioned about the murder and stated that the Natives concerned had ran away to the mountains behind Wau. Later they stated that the Natives who had killed the Police Boys were Natives from the Village of WAI DANDIN behind OTABANDA.

Asked if they knew where the rifles were they disclaimed all knowledge of rifles or killing. This party was detained on my orders until my return.

26th. Aug. 43.

One of the Natives was sent into the MANGOBI-A area to tell the LULUAI and TUL-TUL of DAIDOW to come down to the station, this boy did not return, We then sent two young Native boys to the Village DAGADONGA to bring the father of the boy that was shot. ~~Both boys arrived~~

27th Aug. 43.

Both boys arrived back with the father of the now deceased boy. Knowing that the KUKA-KUKA people are very touchy the whole position was explained to the father who was prepared to let the matter drop for the payment of four knives. Payment was made.

The boy's father also claimed to be the brother of the native we had sent to MANGOBI-A Area, he said that the native had gone to MANGOBI-A but had been chased by the natives of that place as they were old enemies, and the villages had had clashes in the past.

Questioned as to whether he knew anything of the murderers he said that he had no knowledge at all except that he had heard talk which stated that the murderers had left the district.

Later in the afternoon we held another questioning ~~session~~ and this time were able to obtain a list of names of the natives who had participated in the crime, the natives claimed that some were still in the district but that others had run away.

As there was no point in delaying the Patrol we decided to pack our gear and leave the following morning.

28th. Aug. '43.

With a Party of 12 police, 15 carriers, Cpl. Scott and I left DEADCHINAMAN and proceeded up the road until we came to the track leading to MANGOBI-A and then followed it, crossing the river by a large tree.

The track led in a westerly direction through thickly clad brush slopes for about three hours, and then we started on the long climb to pass over the range.

After passing the top of the range we were making good headway along an incline when a party of KUKUKUKU's with the LULUAI in the lead made an appearance.

Whilst I talked to the LULUAI Cpl. Scott formed up the carriers and set a guard.

The LULUAI did not want the party to proceed any further and stated that there was no one in the area except himself and a few boys, I told him that I was coming to have a look at his area and to talk to the people, seeing that he could not turn the party back he proceeded along with the Patrol Party and was valuable in explaining points of interest.

After climbing over this incline the track ran in an easterly direction and after a couple of hours walking we came in sight of MANGOBI-A. There are no villages in this area, the country is very broken and the sides of the spurs have been transformed in numerous large gardens, a house built on ridges about an hour's walk apart are the only signs of any domestication.

Selecting a spot on a ridge about half way between two of the houses I instructed Cpl. Scott to set up the camp, in the meantime I talked to the LULUAI in an endeavour to find out if there were any more people in the area. I told him that he was to go and bring all the people to me, but he protested that they were to far to return that night, I then told him to have them all at the camp site in the

*See US file  
"KUKA - ANGAU -  
Summary of  
Barracks &  
Charges"*



PATROL REPORT.

28th. Aug. '43.

morning and that I would buy any food they should bring, he then left on his mission.

At about 1800 hrs. another native accompanied by two boys walked into the camp, the first thing I noticed was that he was wearing a red sash, similar to those worn by the policeman, and also a rami of a material issued to the police in this area for fatigue dress, Cpl. Scott confirmed my findings but we were careful to keep all signs of recognition out of our conversation.

He told us his name was YA-BA-BINI KAM, on being questioned he stated that the murderers had come to this area and had slept in the nearby house, he had talked to them but did not know their names. On being asked where the natives had come from he replied that they had come to MANGOBI-A for a Dance and had then gone on to the garden over the river where they had killed the policemen. He was told that as the rest of the people were coming to the camp in the morning that he could sleep the night with us, by doing this the police were able to examine the sash and rami without causing any suspicion, and were unanimous in their opinion that it was the property of the murdered policeman.

29th. Aug. '43.

The LULUAI reported to us in the early morning and stated that the people would not come to talk to us, he had brought with him his village book so telling him to wait I checked the names in it with the names already given me by the natives to see if any of the accused murderers lives in this area, there were none, but it is evident that the book is far from complete.

The book had been issued on 27.4.38 by J. Milligan. P.O. and a visit had been made in April 1940 by G.W. BENHAM, the last visit had been made in May 13th. '41., a rest house had been built during this period but had since been burnt down by the natives. All the Patrols had been made from WAU.

During the morning another TUL-TUL made his appearance, he had been wounded in a fight some years ago and is crippled in one leg, on being questioned he stated that he knew nothing of the murderers his crippled leg making it difficult for him to move around to any great distance from his house.

The LULUAI was then called, and whilst I asked him questioned The Cpl. and three police went across and examined his house, they found nothing.

By this time the KUKUKUKU's were becoming suspicious and as I was sure that they knew something of the murder I decided to arrest the LULUAI and the man wearing the sash and hold them for questioning.

As the two boys were able to escape it seemed probable that we would have no more visitors, and as it was after noon I decided to pack immediately and return to DEADCHINAMAN, the return trip was made in very good time as the track is for the most part downhill.

On arrival at DEADCHINAMAN I sent the prisoners to the Police barracks and set a night guard.

30th. Aug. '43.

Sent Cpl. Scott to the garden where the policeman had been killed to make a search for the rifles, with him were four police and three KUKUKUKU boys. I had noticed that when the rifles had been mentioned one of the boys, BIO-BONTA KAM of DAGADONGA, had been very excited and though he had been questioned he professed to know nothing. Cpl. Scott returned with both of the rifles and stated that the boy had shown by signs where the men had stood and thrown the rifles and had gone straight into the brush and recovered them.

During the day I questioned the natives many times but was able to obtain no definite information, the natives of one village would accuse the other village, and they in turn would be accused of the crime, army personnel who had also heard of the arrests had a habit of stopping and making inquiries and in general causing an interruption that made it very hard for me to conduct any reasonable questioning.

Approx. 1600 hrs three of the natives were being taken to the lavatory under escort, one of them, NAU-DAMAIA-KAM slipped his handcuffs and with a sudden surge the three made a bee line for the river, NAU-DAMAIA-KAM dashed into the water and was whirled away downstream by the flood swollen stream, the other two were able to reach the water's edge but were captured by the police. Cpl. Warton of the C.R.E.'s. H.Q. who was further down the river states that the native was washed passed him and from the limp manner in which the body was floating was inclined to think that the native had met his death by drowning.

A search of the river was made until dark, but with out success.

31st. Aug. '43.



PATROL REPORT.

31st. Aug. '43.

As Lt. Rich had expected to be back around this date I decided to remain at DEADCHINAMAN until I received some word from him as to future movements. During the day I again questioned the natives but could obtain nothing further than one village accusing the other.

1st. Sept. '43.

On hearing that Lt. Rich had returned to BULLDOG I arranged with Capt. Tinker, A.S.C., for a truck to take my party to that station.

On arrival at BULLDOG both Cpl. Scott and I made verbal reports to Lt. Rich, who then held an interrogation of the prisoners but without obtaining any more information.

Lt. Rich decided that the Commitment for Trial should be held at Dist. H.Q. KAIRUKU as there are no facilities in this area to exclude the numerous soldiers, and directed that Cpl. Scott and I take the party to that station on the first available transport.

Arrangements were made with Movement Control to obtain a place in a barge proceeding down river to TERAPO.

2nd. Sept. '43.

Owing to a mistake by Movement Control we were not notified that a barge was at the wharf in the morning, and after an unsuccessful wait for further transport were compelled to spend the night at BULLDOG.

3rd. Sept. '43.

Left BULLDOG with party at 0800 hrs, during the trip I met Col. Brown, Area Commandant, at 0930 hrs. On hearing that we had a party of prisoners to take to KAIRUKU he kindly granted us a First Priority to Yule Is.

Arrived at TERAPO at 1900 hrs.

4th. Sept. '43.

Arranged transport for the 5th. Sept. '43.

5th. Sept. '43.

Left TERAPO at 0600 hrs, arriving at Yule Is. at 1445 hrs. Reported to Maj. Thompson, D.O., while Cpl. Scott handed over prisoners to W.O.li. Dean

---

REMARKS.

The following names of natives are those given by the prisoners as the murderers.

WAYDOIKA	of	WAYDANDIN.
IWABUGI-KAM.		"
IAMANYA-KAM		"
BAUKA-KAM.		"
BAGAU-KAM.		"

- (a) The above natives are all from behind the back of OTABANDA.
- (b) The conduct of Cpl. Scott was excellent, he appears to be a good bushman, and very patient and level headed with natives.

A. Montgomery Lieut.  
A. Montgomery. Patrol Officer,  
O.I.C. Sub-Station  
TERAPO.

DISTRICT HQ.  
KAIKUKU  
LAKKAMU DISTRICT  
7 Sept. 43.

DO  
MARKHAM DISTRICT.

ALLEGED MURDER OF No 676 I/Cpl. OROGO AND  
No. 1241 Constable KACRU  
BY KUKUKUKU NATIVES.

1. The scene of the killing near "NEAD CHINAMAU" Camp, appears to be in your District.
2. Some KUKUKUKUS were brought here by a patrol sent out by Lieut. Rich. There was no evidence of any description to incriminate these suspects and they have been released.
3. I have instructed Lieut. Rich to place the matter in your hands and to give you all the details he can. The alleged murderers are reported to have escaped into your district. It seems regrettable that the matter was not placed in your hands from the inception.

Lieut. C. Rich,  
ADO BULLDOG.

*W.H.H. Thompson*  
MAJOR  
D.O.  
W.H.H. Thompson.

Please see copy of letter to DO MARKHAM. You will hand the affair over to him. I cannot imagine why you ordered these KUKUKUKUS who were arrested, against whom there is no evidence, to be sent here. Also why the matter was not referred to the DO MARKHAM at WAU in the first case.

Give the DO MARKHAM all the information you can possible afford him.

ADDS  
ANGAU

For your information please

*W.H.H. Thompson*  
MAJOR  
D.O.

MAJOR  
D.C.



COPY

Sub-District  
BULLDOG.  
1 Sept. 43.

Lieut. Montgomery

As verbally instructed you will proceed to KAIRUKU taking with you Cpl. Scott, and the KUKUKUKU prisoners together with whatever witnesses are necessary for the case.

Six police recently arrived from KAIRUKU, one returned and 5 remained. Of this 5 three are here and the other 2 you will possible intercept on the river or find at TERAPO. Please arrange for these five men to go back with you. They may be used as escorts.

Glen H. Rich Lieut.

A.D.O. BULLDOG.

DS. 30/3/20

P/R No. 18/43-44.

STATION:- KAIRUKU.

DISTRICT:- LAKEKAMU.

AREA PATROLLED:- HENGIN, and along the

WAU-BULLDOG ROAD AS FAR AS THE 22 MILE

PATROL OFFICER:- CPL. SCOTT, N A

DATE:- 17/25 Aug 43.

to duplicate to  
S/R

Duplicate in  
"Staff" DS/753-11



PATROL REPORT.

No. 18 LAK of 213/44  
.....

W.H.H.?  
D.C.

Report of Patrol by. N.A.Scott. Cpl. Patrol Officer.

to. HENGIN, and along the WAU- Bulldog Road as far as the 22 Mile.

Date left Station. 17.8.43. Date returned. 25.8.43.

Purpose of Patrol:-

- (a) To search for Reg. No. 676 Cpl. OROROGO and Reg. No. 1281 Const. KAGENI who had been missing since 1600 hrs. 16.8.43.; and on discovering their bodies and finding that they had been murdered,
- (b) To obtain information which would lead to the apprehension of the murderers.

Patrol accompanied by:-

European Personnel. On the 18.8.43 only.

Lt. Marlay.	A.D.N.L.
Sgt. Burke.	Nat. Lab.
W.Oil. Mann.	Med. Assist.

R.P.C. (No. only.) 8

Native Carriers. (No. only.) 9

Previous Patrol Report ref. Map. \_\_\_\_\_

Last Patrol to area made by:-

- (a) District Services Field Staff on. ....
- (b) Medical Assistant on. ....

N.A.Scott. Cpl.  
N.A.Scott. Patrol Officer.

PATROL REPORT.

17.8.43.

Acting on instructions previously received from the A.D.O. Lt. Rich, I left Bulldog with the intention of proceeding to BANNONS Camp to pay wages due to natives who had been engaged on Plantations near KEREMA, for this purpose I had previously drawn the sum of £50 from the A.D.O.

As the first portion of the road to DEADCHINAMAN is in very poor condition this part of the trip is very hard on carriers, I was fortunate in being able to secure a lift for them over the worst portion which enabled me to reach Deadchinaman before the afternoon showers started.

On arrival I delivered both official and personal mail to the A.D.N.L. Lt. Marlay for distribution to his staff, and later dealt with some official business.

18.8.43.

At approx. 0700 hrs. I was approached by Lt. Marlay who reported to me that an R.P.C. Cpl. and Const. stationed at his H.Q. had been absent since 1630 hrs 16.8.43; he had questioned the other Const. and the police cook boy but had been unable to obtain any information as to their whereabouts.

I sent for the Const. and the Cook-boy, and on questioning them I learnt that the Cpl. and Const. had gone to visit a nearby native garden, they had told the cook-boy to keep their evening meal, so it was evident that they had intended to return that night.

I informed Lt. Marlay of this and he decided to accompany me on a trip to the garden, Sgt. Burke, Nat. Lab. and W.O.ii. Mann, Med. Assist., also decided to come along and help in the search.

At 0900 hrs. the above party, accompanied by Const. MARARA & Const. AMARE left DEADCHINAMAN and after walking along the road to approx. 13½ M. struck the path that leads to the native garden and proceeded along it until the garden was reached.

Immediately on arrival I looked around for any signs of recent inhabitation, there were plenty, bunches of bananas were standing beside a log, sticks of sugar cane were strewn around and a temporary shelter roofed with banana leaves was standing a few yards away from the only permanent building in the garden. Inside this rough house were a few bananas and several pieces of native cloth.

To the side of the hut the ground falls away abruptly and the slope is covered with thick brush, Const. AMARE who had been scouting around drew my attention to broken brush about a chain down the slope so I sent the two Consts. down to investigate.

Whilst they were making their way to the spot the remainder of the party scatted and made a search of the garden, this search was unsuccessful as the garden is pretty heavily grassed.

A shout from one of the Const. drew my attention, and on going to the top of the slope I was informed that the body of the Cpl. had been found.

I climbed down the slope to the spot, the body was lying beside a log, the head pointing down the slope, and was roughly covered with branches, apparently the broken branches that had drawn the Const. attention. On removing the branches I examined the body and found that death had been caused by several blows on the back of the head, it was clothed in the issue police jacket but the Rami and sash were missing, the body was lying on the leather belt and cartridges pouches.

As the surrounding country is thickly covered with brush a search for the const. body would have taken some considerable time for my small party, so, after making a search of the immediate vicinity and finding neither the body of the Const. or rifles; I decided to return to DEADCHINAMAN and arrange for a larger search party.

Prior to leaving Sgt. Burke found a dented .303 cartridge, the dint was very shallow and indicated a faulty rifle, it had been covered by a piece of banana leaf and so had escaped our first search.

On reaching DEADCHINAMAN I found the telephone line was out of order so I decided to go to BULLDOG, send cables to Lt. Rich acquainting him with what had occurred and asking permission to make the necessary Patrol.

On arrival at BULLDOG paraded the Police and notified them that they were to be ready to move to DEADCHINAMAN the following morning, I then sent the cable to Lt. Rich.

As I had not been prepared for a Patrol of this nature I assembled the necessary equipment, obtaining the loan of several small shelter flies from Cpl. Green, Nat. Lab.



PATROL REPORT.

19.8.43.

On arrival at DEADCHINAMAN I found that several things had happened during my absence that would make my task of finding the murderers much easier; a KUKUKUKU native, a TUL-TUL of DABA, accompanied by two other natives has gone to W.O.ii. Wales the previous day and reported the crime, W.O.ii Wales had acted promptly and sent the natives to DEADCHINAMAN under escort of Reg. No. ? Const. GAUMI; the TUL-TUL spoke perfect "Pidgeon English" and had worked in RABAU and WAU.

The TUL-TUL was spokes-man for the three natives and told what appeared to me to be a straight forward story, simply his story was as follows:-

"For some time the Cpl. and the Const. had been going to the garden and helping themselves to fruit and interfering with the women, on the night of the 16.8.43. they had gone to the garden and had been well received by the natives there who had given them fruit and potatoes.

During the course of the night the police had commenced to become familiar with the woman, this incensed the other natives and they set upon the two police killing them and afterwards disposing of the bodies.

I informed him that he would have to stay at the barracks until the case was cleared up as I would need him as a witness to identify the murderers, he was quite agreeable to this and told me that he had been employed by Mr. Hicks a Police Master in RABAU, and understood the methods of the police.

I then paraded my police, obtained some labourers from Lt. Marlay, and set off for the garden which was reached in good time.

Whilst the labourers dug a grave I sent the Police under the charge of Reg. No. 713 Const. GAGAMU, to make a search of the slope in the hopes of finding the body of the Const. and the rifles.

The search continued for some time but at last the police were successful in finding the body of the Const. in a creek some several hundred yards from the garden.

Calling the police in from the search the burial of the Cpl. was completed, and as heavy rain had commenced to fall and it was almost 1700 hrs, I decided to return to DEADCHINAMAN and return the following day to bury the Cpl. and make a further search for the rifles.

On arrival at DEADCHINAMAN I found that the KUKUKUKU natives had eluded the police and had made good their escape, as W.O.ii Wales was well known to the KUKUKUKU's I decided that they had gone to him and immediately sent a letter asking that they be held and returned to this station.

20.8.43.

Once again obtaining some labourers from Lt. Maylay, I set out for the garden to bury the Const. and to make a search for the rifles, several other policemen had reported in after completing their duties so I was confident that with a large party I would be able to search a large portion of the surrounding country.

Several hundred yards from the garden, on the advice of Const. GAGAMU, I decided to cut a track through the thin brush down to the creek and walk up the creek bed to the spot where the Const. Body lay; by doing this I would miss the steep climb and the thick brush.

A few chain off the track I noticed a temporary shelter large enough to accommodate six to eight persons, it had only been built a few days and was still in very good condition.

On reaching the creek we proceeded along the bed to the Const. body, walking over the rocks was risky business as they are coated with moss and very slippery, to walk along the bank is impossible as the brush is very thick and strewn with boulders.

On reaching the Const. body I first selected a site for the grave and set the labourers to digging; next the police were started on a search for the rifles, as the labourers were rather nervous I set two police as guards.

An examination of the body revealed that death was undoubtedly caused by blows on the base of the skull, there were also signs of several blows on both sides of the body but I do not think they would in any way cause death, A close investigation of the body was not possible owing to decomposition, and it is impossible for me to state what kind of weapon was responsible for the wounds.

After completion of the burial a further search was made for the rifles, as before it was unsuccessful, this is very difficult country to search owing to the thick brush and numerous boulders and one has to probe into every nook and cranny to make sure that something had not escaped one's notice.

Patrol Report.

20.8.43.

On my return to Deadchinaman I was handed a wireless message from Lt. Rich giving me permission to make the necessary Patrol to apprehend the murderers, about an hour afterwards Lt. Rich arrived at the station, having obtained a plane from TERAPO to BULLDOG and the subsequent use of a 'Jeep' to Deadchinaman.

I make him a detailed verbal report and we then discussed ways and means of outfitting the Patrol Party, Lt. Rich decided to send to TERAPO for more police, and pending their arrival I would proceed up the road in an endeavour to obtain some information of the crime, and also if possible to apprehend the TUL-TUL and hold him as a witness.

Before leaving Lt. Rich paraded the police and made them an address, in particular he stressed the fact that there was to be no violence and that if any KUKUKUKU's were incounted on the road they were to be held only for questioning, and in the case of any making an escape they could be persuaded but on no consideration would any shooting be done except on my order.

I returned to Lt. Rich the sum I had in my possession for payment to natives, and also the sum of 26 taken from the body of the murdered policeman.

21.8.43.

First obtaining a written permit from Sgt. Burke to draw ten boys as carriers, I proceeded to the 1½ Mile Camp, and working back from there choose what I considered to be ten reliable natives for carriers on the Patrol.

On arrival at DEADCHINAMAN I received a letter from Lt. Rich advising me that Lt. Montgomery would be coming up to take charge of the Patrol, bringing with him several policemen.

22.8.43.

Sent Const. EVEREVITA to BULLDOG with a letter to Lt. Montgomery, giving a list of the necessary gear we would require with the larger party, and also asking that he contact Lt. Rich for an authority to obtain more boys as carriers.

Const. GAGAMU, KAI'IDI, ABARANA, AMARE and OREHE, under the charge of Const. GAGAMU, were dispatched to 17½ Mile Camp, W.O.ii Wales, to remain there in the hopes that the TUL-TUL would return when they would be able to hold him for questioning.

As W.O.ii Wales' camp is only a little over an hour up the road I decided to remain at Deadchinaman to be on hand should Lt. Montgomery phone from Bulldog.

23/8/43.

As there was no phone call or any other message from Lt. Montgomery I decided to proceed to 17½ Mile Camp, taking with me the remainder of the police, from here I would be closer to the village of DABA and several small gardens, and it would be easier to contact the natives there than at the village near DEADCHINAMAN.

On arrival at that camp I learnt from W.O.ii Wales that no natives had been seen in the vicinity of his camp for some days, but that a party had been at the 17 Mile Camp the previous night, and a small party had also been along the road in the direction of FOX'S Camp.

Splitting up my party of police I proceeded to FOX'S Camp, by this means I was able to cover three of the main camps in the area, and would have a much better chance of contacting the KUKUKUKU's.

On arrival at FOX'S Camp I deposited my gear and with my four police set off up the road; about half a mile from FOX'S Camp I left two Constables to go back and keep a watch on the Camp while the remaining two police and I proceeded up the road to see if we could obtain any information from either army personnel or native labourers as to the recent movement of natives in this area.

Information from the troops only amounted to the fact that had seen natives going through their camp in the early hours of the morning and an occasional native called at the Unit to trade for fruit.

Native labourers I questioned stated that they had seen no KUKUKUKU's during the day, but had often seen them passing through in the early hours of the morning.



PATROL REPORT.

23.8.43.

As most previous movements of the natives had been made in the early morning, I decided to keep a watch on the road, and so spent a chilly, unsuccessfull watch from 0400hrs. until 0600 hrs.

During the morning I sent a party of police, in charge of Const. GAGAMU, to have a look at a nearby native garden to see if there were any signs of recent inhabitation, they reported back to me just after noon, and were accompanied by a KUKUKUKU woman.

Const. GAGAMU reported that they had gone to the garden, and as they entered it two small boys ran into the bush, on going over to a small house they had been greeted by the woman, through Const. ABRANA they had asked her to come to the camp and talk to me, a plan to which she readily agreed.

On being questioned she stated that she had heard of the murders but could give no information as to whom was involved.

She stated that the people were very angry because the road was being constructed and the game in the area had gone further afield as she could give me no information I gave her a couple of packets of biscuits and bid two police escort her back to the track leading to her garden.

As nothing further could be gained in remaining at FOX's Camp I decided to return to 17 Mile Camp, and proceeded there with my party.

At about 1700 hrs. it was reported to me that a party of KUKUKUKU were on the road in the vicinity of the 15 Mile; I decided to proceed to the spot and try and contact the natives for questioning.

With a party of police I walked down the road to the 1st. Pack. Transport Coy. and was successful in obtaining the loan of a truck and driver to take my party down the road.

Just before the 15 $\frac{1}{2}$  Mile Mark the KUKUKUKU's were noticed coming down a small steep incline that leads to the 9th. Field Coy. Camp, leaving the truck several hundred yards up the road my party took advantage of the curve of the road and were able to come upon the natives and take them by surprise.

Several of the party were armed with bows and arrows which were confiscated by the police, during the short flurry that occurred, a body of Army Personnel had been standing on the top of the incline and had been calling out to the police to release the natives; as I started to get the natives into a line for questioning members of this group began to descend to the road and before long there was a body of about ten men struggling with the police to release the prisoners.

The police valiently resisted this attempt rescue, and in doing so several received punches from the interfering troops; as I was restoring some order in this chaos a truck came up the road, and in the move to the side of the road one of the natives escaped.

I was informed of this escape by Const. GAGAMU and stepping to the side of the road I saw Const. HENI running up the road, there was no sign of the native escapee.

As I started up the road to call the Const. back I saw Const. ABRANA also start to run up the road.

I had run about half a chain when a voice to the back of me called "shoot him", almost immediately Const. HENI threw up and fired, as I left the 17 Mile Camp I had picked up a OWEN GUN, and as I ran this twisted around under my arm and the magazine stuck into my arm-pit, I slid my hand onto the gun to release the mag. and as I eased the clip it fixed, the shot going into the tops of the trees; this incident took place almost immediately Const. HENI fired.

Const. ABRANA who was to my right also fired at almost the same time as my gun went off, I called to the police to stop shooting, a command which was instantly obeyed.

As I had seen no sign of the native I concluded that he had escaped, and on remarking that to Const. HENI I was astounded when he told me that he had shot him.

I asked where the native was and he pointed into a small waterway which runs out at an angle from the road, on leaving the road and walking to the edge of the water way I saw a native laying in a tree top, the tree having apparently been fallen during the clearing work for the road.

PATROL REPORT.

24.8.43.

I immediately went to the natives side, and as he turned to look at me I noticed that he was only a lad, there was blood on his arm, and when I pointed to it he nodded his head and pointed to the branches into which he had fallen, and then pointed to his leg.

As I leaned over to have a look at what might be wrong with his leg I was horrified to notice that he had a wound in his stomach, and that the organs were protruding slightly.

With Const. HEMI's assistance I carried the native up to the road, and leaving the Const. to look after him I went down the road to make arrangements with the truck driver to take the patient to the Native Hospital.

As I passed the group on the road I noticed that the interference had ceased, and that the police were holding their prisoners awaiting further instructions.

Having made arrangements with the truck driver, who had been some distance down the road, I returned to the party and commenced to make inquiries as to who had called out "shoot him", I could obtain no information on that subject however and so turned my attention as to who gave them permission to interfere with the police in the execution of their duty.. To this question I was met with several hasty denials that they had not been the ones who had interfered.

I then asked the KUKUKUKU's if they knew anything of the murders, they replied that they knew the names of the men concerned in the affair.

As the truck had now come up, I instructed Const. GAGALU to escort the prisoners back to the 17 Mile Camp, and proceeded with the truck to DEADCHINAMAN where I handed the patient over to W.O.ii Mann, the Med. Assist. in charge of the Native Hospital.

Learning that Lt. Montgomery was present at this camp I reported to him and made a verbal summary statement of what had occurred.

Lt. Montgomery instructed me to bring my prisoners down to this camp in the morning where he would question them.

On my return to 17 Mile I arranged with 1st. Pack. Tran. Coy. to lend me a truck to take my party to DEADCHINAMAN the following morning, W.O.ii. Wales had issued the prisoners with rations and had set a police guard.

25.8.43.

I had previously obtained a written order on W.O.ii Crawford to take any six men off his line for use as carriers on the Patrol, and before leaving for DEADCHINAMAN I arranged with him to send them to that camp during the day.

On arrival at DEADCHINAMAN I placed myself and party at Lt. Montgomery's command.

Inquires of W.O.ii. Mann revealed that the native boy had died during the night.

26.8.43., 27.8.43., 28.8.43., 29.8.43. Ref. Lt. Montgomery's Patrol Report.

30.8.43. (Morning.)

Acting on instructions from Lt. Montgomery I took a party of four police and three KUKUKUKU boys to the garden where the police had been killed, to make a search for the rifles.

One of the boys BIO-ANTA-KAM had shown great interest in the conversations about the rifles in previous questionings, and it seemed as though he knew something of their whereabouts.

On arrival at the garden I first took my party to the creek where the constable's body had been found, and started to make a search in the immediate vicinity. After about quarter of an hour this boy intimated to me by signs that we were searching in the wrong place, and pointed to the top of the slope where the garden stood.

On reaching the top of the slope I set the police and boys to searching in the dense brush, but without success.

After some time I called the entire party to the top of the slope and by actions, and with the aid of a stick, showed how far a man standing would throw a rifle.

After several attempts at different positions along the slope, BIO-ANTA-KAM, who had been watching interestedly, shook his head, and walking around the top of the slope finally came to a halt about a chain from the hut. Pointing to the ground he then went through the actions of throwing a rifle and then slid down the bank into the brush.



PATROL REPORT.

30.8.43.

One of the other boys went down into the brush following the lead of BIC-ANNA-AN, and in a few minutes climbed up the bank with a rifle each.

Examination proved that the rifles had been lying in the bush for several days as they were stained and rusty. Both magazines contained cartridges, and in the breech of one of the rifles, afterwards identified as the Cpl.'s., was a cartridge that had been hit by the firing-pin but had not exploded.

I then returned to DEADCHINAMAH, handed over the rifles and make a report to Lt. Montgomery.

From. 31.8.43 TO 4.9.43. Ref. Lt. Montgomery's Patrol Report.

---

GENERAL REMARKS.

On the night of the 24th. Aug. '43. when the native lad was shot. I was unable to make any detailed investigation as I wished to take the patient to hospital as soon as possible.

On arrival at DEADCHINAMAH, and finding that Lt. Montgomery had arrived to take over the patrol, I made a report to him and left it in his hands to make the necessary inquiry.

I am sure that the shooting would not have taken place if it had not been for the interference of the soldiers, the police had a very hard task to hold their prisoners and resist the attempts to release them, this action made them all very excited, and they were willing to obey their primitive instincts and apparently inherited dislike of the KUKUKUKU's.

---

*N.A. Scott* Cpl.  
N.A.Scott. Patrol officer.

COPY

DISTRICT HQ. 20/12/40  
KAIROKU  
10 Jan 44

11/3/44

DS  
645

ADDS  
ANGAU

PATROL REPORT NO. 18 LAK of 43/44

YOUR DS 1092/43 - 2381 of 14 Oct 43

1. I delayed the answer to this until I was able to make a personal visit to TERAPO.

2. I do not see any good reason to afford Lieut. Rich clerical assistance at the present juncture when the termination of activity on the BULLDOG - WAU road seems to be in sight.

*W.H.H. Thompson*

MAJOR  
DO  
W.H.H. Thompson.

*Mia*

*1) Capt de Groot*

*2) La.*

*[Signature]*

*Law 20/1*

✓  
*Law*  
*19/1*



COPY

DS 1092/43 - 2381

HQ  
ANGAU  
14 Oct 43.

DO KAIRUKU

Patrol Report No. Lak. 18/43-44

Receipt is acknowledged of the abovementioned Patrol Report.

2. A supply of rami material, and 1,000 blankets, was despatched from Port Moresby during the third week of September.
3. In order that the question of the provision of clerical assistance to the Terapo office may be examined, please forward a comprehensive report on the volume of clerical work brought about by the circumstances which you mention.
4. At the present time a clerk is not available.

*[Signature]*  
It. Col.,  
ADP.

SAL/ED

2/S 781  
1943  
DS 777/43-2166

HQ ANGAU,  
25 Sep 43.

OG AWW Coy.

Kellape Natives

Forwarded herewith for information is copy of a report of an investigation made by WO/II Jacka, H.F., Patrol Officer, into the trouble between the Kellape natives and Spotters.

Enc.

Lt-Col.  
for Brig.,  
M&QMG, ANGAU.



DISTRICT HQ.  
KAIHORO  
6 Sept. 43.

CONFIDENTIAL.

DADIE  
ANGAU.

PATROL REPORT - BY CPL. N. A. SCOTT

No. 18 of 43/44.

*File "X"*  
*Account*

DS. 73  
Ja

1. Attached please find above Patrol Report in duplicate.
2. The Cpl.'s report of the killing of a KUKUKUKU youth on 24.8.43 near the BUIBBOG track is at variance with the information obtained in the depositions of an enquiry held yesterday by Capt. L. J. O'Malley and WO I Dean, the proceedings of which are forwarded to you this day under confidential cover.
3. I was unable to accept Cpl. Scott's version of the affair, and considered he should be charged with the murder of this KUKUKUKU youth. Cpl. Scott has been suspended from duty pending the decision from HQ as to whether the murder charge against him is to be proceeded with.
4. Under date 20.8.43 in his Patrol Report the Cpl. states:-  
"Before leaving Light. Rich paraded the police and made them an address, in particular he stressed the fact that there was to be no violence, and that if any KUKUKUKUS were encountered on the road they were to be held only for questioning, and in the case of any making an escape they should be pursued but on no consideration would any shooting be done except on my order."
5. There is no question of the Patrol being attacked by the KUKUKUKUS; why, then, did the Cpl. arm himself with a sub-machine gun? The question as to whether he accidentally fired this gun, and whether he was responsible for the death personally should in my opinion be decided by a Court of Law.

*One copy  
of this memo  
of 9 of 10  
report placed with  
referred papers in  
"Hoff" - ANGAU  
Investigation  
+ charges (42-79/43)*

*W. H. Thompson*  
MAJOR  
ID  
W.H.M. Thompson

*GOC com 1/4*

**Illegible**

30/3/21

P/R No. 18/43-44.

STATION:- KAIRUKU

DISTRICT:- LAKEKADILL

AREA PATROLLED:- INSPECTION OF SUBSTATIONS

- KEREMAY TERAPO.

PATROL OFFICER:- MAJOR W H H THOMPSON

DATE:- 9/15 SEPT 43.

PR  
3/5



Report on Patrol by MAJOR W.H.H. THOMPSON

To TERAPO and KEREMA

Date left station 9 Sept. 43 Date returned 15 Sept. 43.

Purposes of Patrol Inspection of TERAPO and KEREMA

Patrol accompanied by: (a) Mr. William C. Hartnett of US Intelligence Corps  
(b) 1 J/Cpl and 1 constable.

Launch "GAWA" Master: Mr. Thomas Baker used as transport.

Map not necessary.

DIARY

Thursday 9 Sept. 43. Left in "GAWA" at 0900 hours and reached mouth of LAKEKAMU River at KUKIPI at 1800 hours, and proceeding up river reached TERAPO ANCAU encampment at 2000 hours.

Friday 10 Sept. 43. Inspected TERAPO encampment personnel. Contacted Lieut. Rich. ADO.

Saturday 11 Sept. 43. Left TERAPO 07.00 hours and reached KEREMA 13.00 hours after waiting outside KEREMA bar for a couple of hours for tide to make. The "MACLAREN KING" was lost on this bar a few months ago, because the Master neglected the elementary precaution of crossing the bar on a rising tide. Met. Capt. Healy ADO at the station.

Sunday 12 Sept. 43. At KEREMA

Monday 13 Sept. 43 At KEREMA

Tuesday 14 Sept. 43. Leaving Mr. Hartnett to spend a few weeks at KEREMA we crossed the KEREMA bar at 08.00 hours and reached KAIRUKU at 01.00 hours on 15 Sept. A rather rough trip around Cape. Possession.

GENERAL - REPORTS ON INSPECTIONS.

KEREMA. Capt. Healy ADO continues to do excellent work here. He has the services of two patrol Officers, Lieut. N.W. Bergin and WO II G.R. Wearne. What has always amazed me in this sub-district is the practical elimination of the deserter problem. Active patrolling from the station along the coast in both directions has led to this happy result, which reflects great credit on all concerned. Capt. Ormsby, who was in charge of the station, for about 4 months while Capt. Healy was on leave, did great work in this connection. Crime of a serious nature has been conspicuous by its absence. It is strange to visit KEREMA and not have to try the usual crop of disgusting rape and other filthy sexual cases, once so prevalent in that area. Deterrent sentence/with whippings, soon after Civil Administration ceased seem to have had the desired effect. A great deal of very useful work in the building line has been carried out of late. Capt. Healy has a pit saw in full swing. The new native hospital is a most commodious affair. A wharf has been built and soon a fair sized boat will be able to come alongside. The Spotters quarters on the CUPOLA are well sited and constructed. I was glad to see that the Prison Warder SHVEER was now taken on as a constable, as per the new regulations. We do not want to lose this man, his record is a rather remarkable one. He enlisted in the Constabulary in March 1917 and resigned in March '33 with the rank of Sergeant. He was then appointed Warder and held the job to date. He cheerfully accepted a reduction from 25/- to 20/- per month. He is now about 47 I should say, a colossal man, of now rather "aldermanic" proportions, but very competent at his job. Like the Warders at KAIRUKU, he did not lose a single prisoner during the troublesome times we passed through in February 42.

Everything is very quiet and going very smoothly in this sub-district because we have a very efficient ADO there. I visited the Government Rubber Plantation on the CUPOLA, the well named ridge just east of the station along the coast. This plantation is now run by a Sgt. Hession, and ex-Sumatra planter, who also served in the Derbyshire regiment in the last war. We are lucky to have such an efficient manager. Personally I was very interested, as I planted a deal of these rubber trees around the station and on the CUPOLA in 1927

OVER.

W.H.H. Thompson  
15/9/43

DS 30/3/24

P/R No. 19/43-44

STATION:- KAIRUKU

DISTRICT:- LAKEKAMU.

AREA PATROLLED:- MEKEO

PATROL OFFICER:- CAPT D.M. D'CONNOR

DATE:- 29 SEPT / 2 OCT 43.

S/R  
315



LAK 19 of 243/44  
Patrol No. ....

30/9/43

Report of patrol by D.M. O'Connor, Capt.;

To MEXCO DISTRICT

Date left station;... September 29th. 1943.

Date returned;... October 2nd. 1943.

Purpose of Patrol;.. Payment of Native Rice Growers.

Patrol accompanied by;... 6 AGs. of R.P.G.  
approximately 16 carriers

Previous Patrol Report Ref. for MAP;... Map not required

Last Patrol to Area made by ~~LT~~ Lt Hardy. 26.9.43

A. District Services Field Staff on ...

B. Medical Assistant on...

W.H.H. Japer  
DO  
4/10/43

OS 1329  
winn.

G.

14.10.43  
War Diary  
14/10/43

REPORT OF PATROL TO MEKEO DISTRICT DURING  
SEPTEMBER--OCTOBER 1943. FOR THE PURPOSE OF  
PAYING OUT MONEY DUE TO NATIVES FOR THE  
PRODUCTION OF RICE.

Patrol made by Capt. D.M. O'Connor. A.D.O.

September 24th, 1943. Acting on instructions from the District Officer (Major W.H.H. Thompson) to proceed to the Mekeo District and pay the money out to natives for the growing of rice, I set out in the Kairuku launch, Nanoma, from Kairuku at 2-15 pm. Reached Biote landing at 5 pm. and there connected with the truck sent by W/O. Williams from the Rice Mill, and reached Inawaia at 6-40 pm. and stayed the night in the Rest House.

September 25th. Paid out cash to the people of Sesubaibua and Inawaia villages for the little rice grown by these people... in view of the labour put in by these people it is to be regretted that they were not more fully rewarded...but seasonal conditions in the form of heavy floods had destroyed much of their rice areas and the amount harvested was only small. Sent 3 Acc. to Aipanaipi & Inaukina districts to arrests deserters

September 26th. Called on the Catholic Mission and had breakfast with Rev Father Coltre, having sent my patrol party ahead to Veipa village Rest House. Left Inawaia myself at 10 am. and arrived at Veipa at 12-50 pm. During the afternoon called on the Catholic Mission.

September 27th. Paid cash to the rice growers of Veipa, Amo Amo, Aipeana, Inawae, and Oriropatana. V.G and councillor of Inawi reported to me here. I had been informed by the O.I.G Rice Mill, W/O. Williams that though the Inawi people's Rice had all been weighed, a considerable quantity had not thus far been delivered by them to the Rice Mill.;...I informed the V.G. and councillor that none of the cash would be paid to the Inawi rice growers until all the rice had been delivered to the Mill.

September 28th. Held G.W.M. and dismissed the case. Sent my party ahead to RARAI Rest House. Rev. Fathers Lande and Finget of the Catholic Mission called to see me at the Rest House... Father Lande being on his way to his station at Wuima. Left Veipa and came to Rarai Rest House and had lunch.



(September ~~28th~~<sup>28th</sup> continued). During the afternoon paid the people of Rarai, and Imonga villages; Held C.N.M. and made one conviction. Had a letter from V/O. Williams informing me of a report he had heard from a native source of some dysentery cases in Bebee village.

September 29th. Paid out cash to Rice growers of Inavauni and Bebee villages. Held C.N.M. and made one conviction. Made enquiries from V.O. of Bebee re. the report of there being dysentery in the village;...apparently this report was without truth,...however I decided to return to Inawaia Via Bebee and see the village for myself.

September 30th. Left the Rest House at 7-10 am. inspected Rarai village and then crossed to Bebee, and went to the Rest House and talked to the V.O. and councillor of the village;.. The V.O. told me that a few people had been sick about two months ago but that now there was only one sick man in the village;..I had a look at this man,..an old native who had been ill for a long time,...there appears to be no dysentery in the village now. Walked to Inawaia, and on the road noticing that the AMO AMO 'Mark' on the road had not been cut for some time I sent for the V.O. of that village as I passed through Oriropatana. During the afternoon interviewed some native claimants for Rice payment with W/O. Williams,..and paid two women of Rarai village. W/O. Williams told me that there was some dysentery in the district ..that two children had died near Jesubaibus, and that there were several other cases that he knew of in the Mekee district and he expressed the wish that a medical officer could be sent up to investigate.

October 1st. Engaged in office work during the day. 3 Ass. whom the D.O. had sent to Kabuna to investigate into the alleged appearance there of a strange native,..or Jap,..reported to me in the afternoon and informed me that <sup>they</sup> had found nothing. W/O. Williams informed me that there were still 52 bags of Rice

which had been weighed and credited to the people of Inawi people which had not come in...and apparently the people had told him that there was no more rice in their village. The total amount weighed and credited to the Inawi people was 138 bags,...and thus for 86 bags only had been delivered at the Mill. When the matter is finalized these Inawi Rice Growers will have to come to Kairuku for their Rice Payments. During the afternoon W/O. Williams showed me the parts of the tractor which had been broken; the ball bearings had come loose from the ball race in the main transmission gear on the 'off' side which drives the caterpillar,...and the teeth on the cog wheels had been badly gashed. W/O. Williams is now awaiting the arrival from Port Moresby of another transmission gear which it is hoped can be spared from one of the tractors now lying at Nappa Nappa.

September 2nd. Left Inawia and took the launch 'Theresa' from the Rice Mill landing, with all my party., actually moving off from the landing at 7-30 am. After a run of 300 yards only the launch ran aground;..after an hours work with ropes we were able to get free and continued on down the ~~highway~~ Angabunga River, having many stops from engine trouble and also running aground and onto snags in the river several times. Arrived at the river mouth at 3 pm. and there awaited for the tides to rise sufficiently to enable us to pass over the bar at the mouth of the river, and reached Kairuku at 9-40 pm.

List of Rice payments made to villages for Rice

Jesubaibus....	E4 - 4 - 2
Inawia ....	E19-- 18 - 9
Aipeana ....	E134-2 - 4
Oriropatana ..	E31 - 3-- 7
Bebec ....	E64 - 0 - 6
Inavauni ....	E116-- 9-- 1
Inonga ....	E26 --4 --9-
Rapai ....	E121-- 10 - 5
Ane Ane ....	E89 --2-- 10
VEIPA ....	E430-- 9-- 7
INAWA ....	E9 - 5 - 0
<hr/>	
Total paid out. E	1046 - 11 n 0

*D. G. ...*  
Capt.  
Kairuku. 4/10/43



30/3/26

P/R No. 22/43-44

STATION:- KAIRUKU.

DISTRICT:- LAKEKAMU.

AREA PATROLLED:- GOILALA AREA

PATROL OFFICER:- LT A.P. HARDY.

DATE:- 25 SEPT/4 OCT 43

VR  
315

30/3/26

No. 22 of 43/44

1943  
1665

REPORT OF PATROL BY - Lieut. Hardy G.P. O.I.C. GOILALA.  
THROUGH GOILALA AREA.

DATE LEFT STATION. 25th September 43. DATE RETURNED. 4th October 43.

PERIOD OF PATROL. 10 days.

- PURPOSES OF PATROL.
1. To visit KERAU Mission to discuss matters re the road and to obtain lists of suitable carriers in that area. Some Court cases also had to be attended to.
  2. To visit the old camp of TAPINI and inspect the drome and new gardens which were being planted up there.
  3. To investigate into an alleged murder in the PORETA area.
  4. To investigate into some alleged crimes in the TAVUNI and KATAIPA areas.

N.P.C. 6. RECRUITS. 6. CARRIERS. 20.

Last patrol through the area covered was made by W/O Jacka the former O.I.C.

25th September 1943. Gave final instructions to A.C. IMANGA who would be in charge of the police and station work during my absence. The Spotters were to take care of the mail etc. Departed station 9 a.m. and proceeded down through MAINI area to the AUGARA river, then up to LAIYATI coming onto the main mission road. There met Father Maye and discussed matters re the road and its labour. From there was to proceed on horseback, but the horse could not be caught so ended up walking. Proceeded down the mission road to the AIWARA river, then up to KERAU Mission, arrived 5 p.m. From the AIWARA river to the mission is a steady climb of about 4,000 ft.

26th September. Heard a number of Court cases which were all settled. Continued work discussing village matters with the Village Const. and Council.

27th September. Continued work during the morning with Father Morin compiling a census of suitable carriers from KULUMUTU and GURINI villages. 2 p.m. departed for OROGOAIVARA, arrived 3 p.m. and made camp. It was useless continuing the journey as very heavy rain fell for the rest of the afternoon.

28th September. Departed 7 a.m. passing through OROGOAIVARA village down to KATAIPA creek, then continued up the slopes for an hour to TAVUNI village. From there continued the journey to TAPINI passing through villages KARI and ARIONALAVAVI descending to ANIAPA creek, up to BAPITI village and then on to TAPINI, arrived 3 p.m. and made camp. Particular track taken is in head sheet.

29th September. At TAPINI. Inspected drome, gardens and buildings. The drome is free from obstructions, but the grass needed cutting, so instructions were given about same. New gardens are being planted up with sweet potatoes, corn, yams and taros. The buildings are being kept in repair in case of emergency by S/Cpl. KULAU.

30th September. Departed 7.15 a.m. for PORETA. Having passed over the hill to TATUPIITA proceeded down the LOVA river following it to the junction of the LOILOIPA from whence followed the LOILOIPA. As the patrol was in chase of a murderer camped for several hours at LOINI creek so that PORETA would be made by nightfall thus not giving away our presence. Broke camp at 2 p.m. and proceeded on our way. to TAPALAVAVI from whence departed the main track



from whence the patrol continued through the bush for some time, then back on to the main road. Managed to make PORETA by 5.30 p.m. without being seen by the village people. As fog and mist had closed around the barracks it was safe to make camp without our presence being known by the village people. During the night Cpl. MANITI and a strong force of police left the barracks to close in on the villages concerned.

1st October.

Cpl. MANITI and police return with supposed murderer FASIS of PORETA. Case would be heard and tried by D.O. KAIRUKU who would be visiting GOILALA Police Camp shortly. Other Court cases and village matters settled. Mail received.

2nd October.

Departed barracks 7 a.m. and proceeded down to the LOILOIRA river passing through UPOU village. Having crossed the bridge continued up and down hills coming to LATATA Creek from whence a steady climb to KAVANAVA. The patrol rested there a while and continued to the barracks of LAVAKAIRA, arrived 12.30 p.m. and made camp. Barracks in bad condition, instructions given to Vil. Const. TAURA to have same repaired. Food in quantity was brought in by Vil. Const. TUPA and KOIRO which was very acceptable. During the afternoon a heavy storm broke and very heavy rain fell continuing well into the night.

3rd October.

Departed 7.30 a.m. proceeding down for  $\frac{1}{2}$  of an hour passing through LOPUAVA village to the LOVA river. Then continued on a steady climb for 2 hrs. 40 mins. reaching KORUPULAVAVA where the patrol rested for a while to make plans re a round up of some TAVUNI and KATAIRA people who had been getting out of hand. Departed 11.30 and continued climbing for  $\frac{3}{4}$  of an hour until reaching a suitable place above the villages of TAVUNI and KATAIRA where final instructions were given. The round up was carried out and some of the culprits caught. Time of arrival 1.30. Pitched tent and made camp near TUMIOVAVA village.

4th October.

Departed 8 a.m. and proceeded down for  $\frac{1}{2}$  of an hour to KATAIRA creek and then up the slopes to CROROGAIVARA reaching there 9.20. Stayed a while and discussed matters with the Councillor there re carriers and gardens. These people had planted up a very big area with sweet potatoes, and are still planting. It was explained to them to keep up the good work as it was the only way to solve the problem of food shortage. Departed 9.40 proceeding straight down to the AINARA below hitting it at 10.40. Having followed up the river for some short distance struck the track, and began on a continuous hard climb to GOILALA Police Camp, arrived 12.30 p.m.

NEW PURPOSES OF PATROL.

1. At KERAU Mission Station met Father Norin who is in charge there. We discussed matters re the road in progress to Speedie's Gap and worked together obtaining lists of suitable carriers from the KERAU area. The road progresses well and has reached a point KIRILAVA in the TUMS area. The ETA and IVANI people are now working on the road, and work in general progresses satisfactorily. Father Maye is at the moment in charge of the road work and is satisfied with the progress so far. Police from the station are assisting Father Maye on the road.

As my stay at KERAU was short only a certain number of lists of carriers were obtained. This is a difficult task as the peoples are so scattered. However with the aid of Father Norin who kindly assisted with this work and the Vil. Const. a number of lists were obtained.

The mission as usual was most hospitable during my stay.

2. Carried out an inspection on the old camp at TAPIHI and the drome there. The drome is free from obstruction, but the grass a little high. Instructions were given to L/Cpl. KULAU who is caretaker there to have the grass cut and cleared.

The buildings are being kept in repair as far as possible in case of an emergency. The houses are still weather proof and quite fit to live in.

At the moment big gardens are being planted up with sweet potatoes, yams taro and corn. These gardens are most important as at the present food is very scarce and we don't want to be short of food in the future. There are 2 police there besides the L/Cpl. who are supervising the work which is being done by station prisoners. The work progresses satisfactorily, but such work takes time as fences have to be put around the whole grain order to keep the pigs out.

Ref. para 3.

To get to PORITA without being seen by the village people was a bit of a problem. However it was done. The patrol sent scouts out ahead all the time while the remainder followed proceeding along old bush tracks, cutting its way through bush proper and moving silently taking advantage of the mist, fog and rain in different places. PORITA barracks was reached without the village people knowing, and as mist and fog hid the barracks from view the patrol made camp. It was believed that the murderer was in the area but nobody knew for certain, and of course what house he was in if any had to be found out. Cpl. MANITI with a strong force of police left for the area concerned during the early hours of the morning in order to obtain a good position near the villages under cover of darkness. It was not until early morning that KATIS the supposed murderer was captured when he tried to kill one of the police with his bow and arrow. KATIS did not have time to escape so hid in the bush hoping to be able to commit another one of his evil murders, but he missed out. During the attack of KATIS on A.C. ERORO who was by himself at the time RORO slipped and fell. Immediately KATIS followed with braced bow to within three yards ready to kill, so ERORO was compelled to fire wounding KATIS, he was then captured. KATIS was carried back to GOILALA Police Camp where he would await trial by D.O. KAIRUKU. An inquiry from evidence was taken by the O.I.C into the wounding of KATIS and the case would be heard by D.O. KAIRUKU. The police did a good job.

Ref. para 4.

An investigation into the alleged crimes committed in the TAVUNI and KATAIPA area was carried out, but only some of the culprits were caught. Our coming to these villages was known before hand and the culprits had run away into the bush. The patrol moved to these villages very carefully sending scouts out ahead, but it was later learned that a boy who passed our camp the previous night had given the show away. However the alleged crimes were not as bad as led to have believed, and will be straightened out in due course.

Roads and Tracks.

The KERAU Mission road is of course in good order being recently constructed. There have been a few minor land slides, but these portions have been attended to.

Track from TAVUNI to TAPINI taken on this patrol is in a shocking state and very rough, but this track is not the normal route and is very seldom used even by natives, so it was expected that it would be out of order.

Track from TAPINI to PORITA on the whole only fair. In parts very rough, but on nearing PORITA it is quite decent.

Track from PORITA to LAVAKAIRA only a rough native track. From LATATA creek up to KAVANAVA village the track was overgrown and had to be cut through. The track had been closed by the natives according to one of their customs in which, when a relative dies the road is closed to others until a feast is made when it is opened again. Instructions given for it to be cleared as it should have been opened ages ago.

Track from LAVAKAIRA to TAVUNI fair. TAVUNI TO ORORO-CAIVARA reasonably good. OROROGAIVARA to Police Camp just a footpath.

General. There was plenty of work to be done at the station, but the murder in question had taken place before the O.I.C's arrival and could not be left indefinitely. It was necessary for the patrol to be carried out, for other reasons as well, so it was made. The objects of the patrol on the whole were achieved.

..... J. Hardy, Lieut.  
J. P. Hardy O.I.C.



DS 30/3/26

P/R No. 23/43-44.

STATION:- KIRUKU

DISTRICT:- LAKEKAMU.

AREA PATROLLED:- GOILALA & KAMBISI (ONONGE)

POLICE CAMPS.

PATROL OFFICER:- MAJOR. W.H.H. THOMPSON.

DATE:- 6/30 OCT 43

told me of an outbreak of yaws. I understand that the Medical Assistant has a large supply of injections for same with him. Personally I thought that the natives were looking in their usual state of good health, but they generally hide their sick from a patrolling party. They are, most of them, still in the stage of preferring their own Switch doctors or puripuri man to our treatment.

CLIMATE CULTURE. I visited the seed beds at ORONGE, FANE and MAFULU. These seeds have taken much longer to germinate than was anticipated. There is nothing to be done until the seedlings grow up, and that will not be for several months. The Fathers and the Sisters of the three missions are looking after them. I think that we can safely leave the whole matter in their hands, and give them any help they require in about four months time for the transplanting of the young trees.

If I may be allowed to end on a personal note. The patrol did me an enormous amount of good. It was as beneficial as a holiday south, and the wonderful mountain air I can recommend to anyone. I go so far as to assert that it sets one up better than a few weeks leave in Australia.

*W.H.H. Thompson*

MAJOR  
D.O.  
W.H.H. Thompson.



DS30/3/30

P/R No. 24/43-44.....

STATION:- KAIRUKU.....

DISTRICT:- LAKEKAMU.....

AREA PATROLLED:- TP. MEKEO and INLAND MEKEO AREA.....

PATROL OFFICER:- CAPT L. J. O'MALLEY.....

DATE:- 22 Nov/8 DEC 43....

5/11  
3/5

*Wm  
D O  
14/12/43*

*230/3/30*

No. 24 Kairuku L.D  
of 43/44

Report of patrol by, L. James O'Malley, Capt. A.D.C.

To Mekeo and inland Mekeo Area.

Date left Station. 22/11/43. Date returned. 8/12/43.

Purpose of patrol. General Inspection. Native Labour Matters.

European personnel.....

Royal Papuan Constabulary. FIVE. Native Carriers, Average TWENTY.

Last patrol by.....

District Services Field Staff.....

Medical Assistant on.....

MONDAY. 22/11/43.

Left Kairuku Station per "GAV" at 1230 hours, and arrived at Arapokina at 1615 hours. Remained the night at Arapokina.

TUESDAY. 23/11/43.

Left Arapokina at 0830 hours, arriving Wonono, Catholic Mission Rice plantation at 0930 hours. Left at 0945 hours and arrived at Kubuna at 1015 hours. Left Kubuna for Ukua Rubber Plantation (Catholic Mission) at 1300 hours, and returned to Kubuna at 1600 hours.

WEDNESDAY. 24/11/43.

Left Kubuna at 0700 hours, arriving at Wonono at 0800 hours, native labour inspection (separate report). Got away from Wonono at 0900 hours, and taking native track, arrived at Boroke at 1215 hours. Leaving Boroke proceeded to Oro'i bridge and to Inawabui arriving there at 1545 hours.

THURSDAY. 25/11/43.

Remained at Inawabui, general inspection and adjustment in census made.

FRIDAY . 26/11/43.

Left Inawabui at 0700 hours, arriving at Eboa village at 0800 hours. After inspection of village, proceeded to Inawaia village arriving there at 0945 hours.

SATURDAY. 27/11/43.

Remained at Inawaia, general inspection and census adjustments.

SUNDAY . 28/11/43.

Remained at Inawaia until 1200 hours. Proceeded to Mekeo Rice Mill at 1400 hours, remaining there until 1800 hours. Returned to Inawaia village at 1845 hours.

MONDAY . 29/11/43.

Left Inawaia village at 0700 hours, arriving at Rice mill at 0715 hours. Leaving Rice Mill at 0930 hours, per launch, proceeded to Oriropetana village, arriving there at 1130 hours. After inspection of village, left for Beipa arriving at the rest house at 1300 hours.

*J.*

*Please return to O's in due course*

*Re for 19.12.43*



TUESDAY 30/11/43.

Remained at Beipa village, general inspection and census adjustments.

WEDNESDAY 1/12/43

Remained at Beipa, general inspection of Aibeana village. Census adjustments of Aibeana, Oriropetana and Amo Amo villages.

THURSDAY 2/12/43.

Got away from Beipa at 0700 hours, passed through Amo Amo and Rarai villages, arriving at Inauuni Village at 1130 hours. Inspected village.

FRIDAY 3/12/43.

Left Inauuni at 0700 and proceeded to Imunga village on the Inauafunga River arriving there at 1030 hours.

SATURDAY 4/12/43.

Left Imunga village at 0700 hours and arrived at IOI village at 0900 hours. Left IOI village and arrived at Maipa village at 1030 hours.

SUNDAY 5/12/43.

Left Maipa at 0830 hours per canoe, and proceeded to Ameiaka village (KOINA), arriving there at 1030 hours, left again and arrived at Bina village at 1200 hours. Arrived at Apanapi village at 1400 hours. Left again per canoe and arrived at Biarua village on the coast at 1800 hours.

MONDAY 6/12/43.

Left Biarua at 0700 hours and proceeded to Iokea village, inspected same and left at 0930 hours, proceeding to Oiapu Village arriving at 1130 hours.

TUESDAY 7/12/43.

Left Oiapu village at 0900 hours and arrived at Kivori village 1130 hours, continued on to Waima area arriving there at 1300 hours.

WEDNESDAY 8/12/43.

Got away at 1000 hours and arrived at Maiera plantation at 1030 hours, Native labour inspection. Continued on to Pimipaka village, ~~huanambg~~ and across by launch to Kairuku station, arriving there at 1530 hours.

.....

Brief survey of country passed through.

Arapokina to Kubuna, low hills, covered with long grass and stunted gum trees, timber in various areas, especially near Kubuna in the vicinity of the foothills of the mountains. Returning from Kubuna, leaving the graded road and taking native track to Boroko, grass hills, stunted gum trees, but in the small valleys, heavy timber. From Boroko to Inauabui, flat country, covered with high grass, swamp lands and scattered timber areas. From Inawaia to Inauuni, large grass areas running back as far as the Inauuni hills which are covered with dense timber, before reaching the hills there are large swamp lands. From Beipa on to Maipa, heavy timber country and jungle and between Inauuni and Imunga we also find short hills of red clay and heavily timbered. Onwards from Imunga to Maipa, mostly flat, swampy and dense bush and timber. From Maipa to Biarua, on the coast, high red clay banks, heavily timbered on upper reaches of river, but nearing the mouth of the river, sago and nipa palm swamps. From Biarua along the coast to Kairuku, mostly beach walking, inland flat country covered with grass, extending into grass hills and the Mekeo plain. Whole area well watered and drained by many large rivers.

R O A D S

Graded road from Arapokina to Kubuna, not in good condition, many parts washed away by heavy rains. From Onono to Orof, native track, mostly overgrown has not been in use for some time.

ROADS cont.

From Orof to Inauabui, motor road, now mostly under two feet of water, impossible at present time for motor transport. From Inauabui, via Eboa, road in fair condition, but too wet for motor transport. From Rice Mill to Oriropetana village, road impassable, now under five feet water for approximately five miles. From Beipa to Inauauni, road fair, but in sections, water and deep mud. Inauauni to Maipa, road in bad condition, water and mud swamps.

BRIDGES.

Orof bridge near Arapokina, although still standing is about three feet under water. Small bridge near Bioto creek still in good condition, but large bridge across Bioto creek has been damaged, all decking washed away and all that remains is the steel rails and concrete posts, is about six inches under water, foot traffic only can cross the river. Decking has been collected by the natives and stacked on the side of the road, but no repairs can be done until the flood waters recede.

There are no bridges over the inland rivers and at the present time it is very difficult to get over them owing to the floods.

REST HOUSES.

The rest house at Kubuna is nearly completed and it is an excellent job. There is also a house being built for the police and one for the mountain cargo. All the rest houses throughout the district were found to be in fair condition, with the exception of Maipa and the people have been instructed to remove the old one and build a new one.

VILLAGES.

Numerous villages were visited and inspected, all were found to be clean and tidy, but flood waters in many places have caused numerous muddy holes, some in the centre of the villages, these will remain until the flood waters recede, there is no way at present to dry or drain them off.

The village of IOI on the IOI Creek, was partially destroyed by flood waters, and the people have now moved to the opposite side of the creek, they have a good area here and there is no danger from the flooded river and of their village being swept into the creek.

The cleanest village seen on the patrol was the small village of Ameiaka built on the banks of the Biaru River. I congratulated the Village Constable AME PINUAUNA on the excellent condition of his village.

AGRICULTURE (Native)

The Mekeo is very well known for its rich soil, which is carried down from the mountain areas by the St Joseph (Angabunga) River, which during flood time deposits the silt all over the Mekeo area, but food supply at present is not at all good, the various foods which generally grow, such as corn, sweet potatoes, cabbage, sugar cane, taro, pumpkin, tomatoes etc have all been washed away, and the people are practically living on taro alone. PawPaw and bananas are plentiful. Most of the gardens have been washed away, but the natives are preparing their new garden lands where possible. This is a very unusual wet season that we are having in this area.

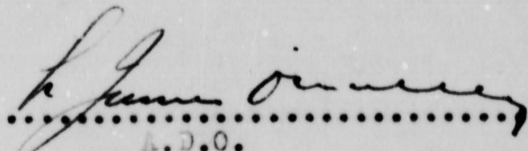
Rice report separate.

DESERTERS.

Inquiries were carried out in regard to deserters in this area, and on good information it would appear that these natives, lists of which were received at Kairuku, from time to time, are in Moresby area and also at Terapo, a list is being compiled and will be forwarded to each district for check up on these natives.

Native Labour Inspections.

The above were carried out on various small plantations in the area. (Separate reports).

  
.....Capt.  
A.D.O.  
Lakelamu District.



DS.

30 1 3 13

P/R No. 27/43-44

STATION:- Kairuku

DISTRICT:- Lakekamu

AREA PATROLLED:- Bulldog, via  
Muravasi (Lakekamu River)

PATROL OFFICER:- W/O ii R. M. Seelan

DATE:- 19 April - 4 May 1944.

Report of patrol by R.M. Geelan, WO II.

To Bulldog, via MIRAVASI (Lakekamu R.) and return to MIRAVASI.

Date Left Station. 19.4.44. Date Returned. 4.5.44.

Purposes of Patrol. To take over charge of the MIRAVASI Police Post from Lt. Bergin; supervising maintenance work on BULLDOG air-strip; routine patrols of local villages.

European Personnel.....

Royal Papuan Constabulary. FIVE. Native carriers Average 15.

Last Patrol By Lt. C. Rich.

District Services Field Staff. ....

Medical Assistant on.....

Wednesday 19 Apr. Left KAIRUKU at 1030 hrs. Proceeded to PINUPAKA by canoe; thence along the beach to WAIMA. Arrived at 1730 hrs.

Thursday 20 Apr. Left WAIMA at 0700 hrs. Reached KIVORI, a Catholic Mission Plantation, at 0830, and continued around Cape Possession to OIAPU, arriving at 1530.

Friday 21 Apr. Left OIAPU at 0430 hrs., to take advantage of the morning cool. Rising tides delayed the party, and IOKEA was reached at 140 hrs.

Saturday 22 Apr. Party left IOKEA at 0530 hrs. Inspected two wreck Boston aircraft, about an hour west of IOKEA; plenty of ammunition in the magazines. Continuing, we reached BIARU at 1130, Lesi at 133 and finally arrived at MIRIVASI at 1530.

Sunday 23 Apr. Repairs to the MIRIVASI launch being under way, my start for BULLDOG will be delayed. Spent this day working with Lt. Bergin on the motor.

Monday 24 Apr. At MIRIVASI.

Tuesday 25 Apr. At MIRIVASI. Repairs concluded; arrangements made leave for BULLDOG tomorrow.

Wednesday 26 Apr. Left MIRIVASI at 0530 hrs. Good progress up the LAKEKAMU River, to GRIME POINT, where a halt was made for the night at 1730 hrs.

Thursday 27 Apr. Left GRIME POINT at 0700 hrs. At 1230 arrived BULLDOG.

Friday 28 Apr. At BULLDOG. Clearing strip of grass, etc., under way.

Saturday 29 Apr. At BULLDOG.

Sunday 30 Apr. Worked all day to-day, and made good progress. The labourers will take their rest day on Wednesday.

Monday 1 May. Work on strip almost completed. Plan to leave tomorrow.

Tuesday 2 May. Start delayed by faulty motor. Rectified, but late to proceed.

Wednesday 3 May. Left BULLDOG at 0700 hrs. Quick trip down stream. Arrived at MIRIVASI at 1530 hrs.

.....

SURVEY OF COUNTRY PASSED THROUGH.



SURVEY OF COUNTRY PASSED THROUGH.

KAIRUKU - MIRIVASI. Beach walking throughout, except for one stretch of four hours, from KIVORI PLANTATION to OIAPU; this provides a by-pass to the beach, in case of high tides which would cause delay in this section. Beach is clean...no serious obstructions. Coastal timber is mostly light secondary growth; coconut plantations form the balance of the vegetation. At MIRIVASI, land has been cleared of everything but the coconuts.

MIRIVASI - BULLDOG. Typical river country; up to TERAPO, country is very low and swampy, with sago and nipa palm, intermixed with tall grass. From here to GRIME PT. the appearance alters somewhat; sago gives place to heavy timber, interspersed with tall, thick grass. These conditions continue up the small creek leading to the BULLDOG strip, which is placed in a flat and somewhat swampy plain. Heavy timber surrounds the strip; runways (approaches) have been cleared at each end of the landing area.

The river is fair, but at four points, care has to be exercised. These points all occur in the small BULLDOG creek. Snags are but few in the main LAUKAMU.

ROADS. The only road in this area is that between KIVORI and OIAPU; it is an easy track, having been built by the APINAIFI petroleum people. Runs through lightly - timbered grassy country....there are a few small creeks to be crossed, and the gradients are but slight.

Beach walking is good throughout.

BRIDGES. There are bridges on all creeks in the above mentioned road. They are all in passable order, but they need to be replaced. The Vill. Const. concerned (of KIVORI) has been instructed to attend to this matter.

REST HOUSES. All coastal rest-houses are in excellent condition. At BULLDOG, the AN AU HL building is in good repair. The Constabulary detachment at present on duty there have been instructed to maintain it.

VILLAGES. All villages inspected were found to be clean. The IOKEA people have been kept particularly up to the mark in this respect....thanks to two of the most efficient Village Councillors I have yet encountered.

AGRICULTURE. None of the folk seen on this trip are in difficulties in this matter. The river peoples have an almost unlimited supply of "Labia" (sago), added to the taro which their gardens produce. Coastal villages have ample vegetable foods, bananas, sago, taro, etc., and their fish supply has apparently been extraordinarily good to date.

Deserters. Two deserters were reported to me by the ADO KAIRUKU, but due to the fact that I had to proceed back to KAIRUKU at short notice, I was unable to apprehend them. Lt. Bergin, who returned recently to MIRIVASI, has all information in this matter.

HEALTH REPORT. The condition of the people of this area is not the best. From IOKEA to MIRIVASI sores and skin ailments are prevalent. The hospitals of the LMS and Catholic Missions are doing excellent work; but they cannot cover the same ground as can a Govt. Patrol.

I had the opportunity of accompanying S/sgt. Richardson of KEREMA on a medical patrol through this area. The result is that, in the space of six days a 60-bed hospital has been built at MIRIVASI, and inside three weeks it has been filled.

At present, there are 50 in-patients at the hospital, and a daily total of 200 out-patients are coming from near-by villages for treatment. There is one Native Medical Assistant at MIRIVASI at present.

*[Handwritten signature]*  
.....  
RM G eelan W.C.II.

*[Handwritten initials]*  
25/6

REPORT ON ROYAL PAPUAN CONSTABULARY  
ACCOMpanyING PATROL.

Herewith my report on the following Native Personnel:

Reg. No. 879 L/Opl. MIKHELE: A competent NCO. His discipline is good, and he has a keen sense of duty. Inclined to be hasty at times. His conduct and ability are good.

Reg. No. 1240 Const. TOARIFE: Conduct fair; ability fair. Is inclined to become careless, and must be kept up to the mark.

Reg. No. 1205 Const. MEVAL: Conduct excellent; ability above average. He could be an excellent man, if it were not for his "don't care" attitude.

Reg. No. 1049 Const. TALIAGEAJI: Conduct good; ability good. A reliable and efficient constable. Showed a fair knowledge of launches, engines and their maintenance.

Reg. No. 2303 Const. RAWALI: Conduct good; ability at present only fair. I think he lacks experience. He is keen, however, and should improve.

*R. M. Gecken*  
.....  
R.M. Gecken WOLLE

*W. M. G. / 2/6*



AUSTRALIAN MILITARY FORCES.

AKKAU,  
DISTRICT HQ,  
KAIKORU,  
5 JUNE 44.

Ref. 416/30/3

HQ, SOUTHERN REGION,  
AKKAU, Port Moresby.

PATROL REPORT No. 27 of KAIKORU,  
43/44.

Attached in duplicate please find above Report.

2. All ammunition, guns and equipment salvaged from the two wrecked Postons reported under date Sat. 22 Apr. is now stored at MIRAVASI Sub - station awaiting transport by launch "GATA", which has been broken down with engine trouble for past month or so.

3. The patrol seems to have been efficiently carried out.

*W.H.H. Thompson*  
Major  
W.H.H. THOMPSON Major, D.O.

DS.

3013 142

P/R No. 28/43-44

STATION:- Karuku

DISTRICT:- Lakekamu

AREA PATROLLED:- Karuki - Solale -

Nambu - returning at Hanosa via Onoge

PATROL OFFICER:- Major J. Grahamslaw

DATE:- 6<sup>th</sup> May - 1<sup>st</sup> June 1944 .



12 JUN 44  
Report on Patrol by Major T. GRAHAM, D.O., from KATIKU to GOLLALA  
and KATIKU, returning to the coast at KANONIA via OREKE.

Date left Station 6/5/44. Date Returned 1/6/44.

Purpose of Patrol: (a) Inspection of Gollala Sub - station and Kambiso  
Police Post,  
(b) Inspection of Kanonia - George road.

European Personnel: Major T. GRAHAM, D.O.

Native Personnel: 6 Police and 1 H.M.S.

Car Load: Average number 35.

Last Patrol over this Route: Major THOMPSON in 1942.

Map Reference:

#### DIARY OF PATROL.

Sat. 6 May 44. Left Katiku in launch "Manona" at 0730 hours towing  
an open boat laden with carriers and stores. Arrived ANPOKINA 1040  
hours. Continued by road to KIRUNA which was reached at 1700 hours.  
Distance walked 11 miles.

Sun. 7 May. Left KIRUNA 0730 hours. Passed through TOKO and DITTI  
and reached OROBA Rest House (3000') at 1500 hours.

Mon. 8 May. Left OROBA 0730 hours. Passed through KOFOKOFO and con-  
tinued on to OBAGRA, or DELAVA (3000') which was reached at 1150 hours.  
Sent carriers on to MASEIKA rest house. Stayed at Mission for night.

Tues. 9 May. At OBAGRA. During the day a number of village officials,  
some coming from 5 and 6 hours away (walk), reported to me.

Wed. 10 May. Left OBAGRA 0830 hours. Rode to DEVA DEVA rest house  
on a horse kindly loaned by Father Moyon. Distance 14 miles. Continued  
by foot to MAFULU rest house (5000'), arriving there at 1710 hours. Dis-  
tance walked 13 miles.

Thurs. 11 May. Left MAFULU 0730 hours. Passed through KILLA VISEA  
Mission and continued on to FANE, arriving there at 1215 hours. Dis-  
tance 14 miles.

Fri. 12 May. Left FANE 0830 hours and proceeded to MOWDO (6 miles).  
Met Parish Priest there and received reports from village officials  
who had gathered to meet me. Returned to FANE at 1430 hours.

Sat. 13 May. Left FANE at 0600 hours. Reached ANGA River crossing  
1000 hours. Short rest here and then proceeded to KONE which was reached  
at 1850 hours. Distance 15 miles.

Sun. 14 May. Left KONE 0815 hours. Departure delayed owing to non-  
arrival of local carriers. After a long and gruelling climb reached the  
top of the mountain (about 9000') and then descended to IVANE Rest House  
(7000') arriving there at 1817 hours. Very tiring day for carriers.

Mon. 15 May 44. Left IVANE at 0300 hours. Very steep descent to IVANE  
River and crossed the raging torrent on a dilapidated native bridge.  
Quite an experience, this. Climbed to KOFOKOFO Rest House. Short rest  
there and continued on to GOLLALA Station (7300') which was reached at  
1345 hours.

16 & 17 May. At GOLLALA.

2.

5

DIARY OF PAROL (Cont.)

Thurs. 18 May. Carriers left GOLLALA 0730 hours. Followed an hour later and caught them at KOPOKORO Rest House, where a stop was made for lunch. Continued on to KOSIPI Rest House (6000'), arriving there at 1615 hours. Last couple of miles through swamp is steady going. Distance 23 miles.

Fri. 19 May 44. Left KOSIPI 0730 hours. For several hours walked through swampy country and found it difficult going. Arrived WAITAPE (6000') at 1415 hours. Distance 16 miles.

Sat. 20 May. Left WAITAPE 0730 hours. Reached OROBI at 1050 hours. Continued for some miles along graded track, then branched off on a native track. Climbed steadily and crossed the mountain at about 7000', and then descended to KANISI Police Camp (3800'), arriving there at 1535 hours. Distance 22 miles.

21 and 22 May. At KANISI.

Tues. 23 May. Left KANISI 0735 hours. Followed native track to OROBI instead of mission graded road, thus saving 2 hours. Reached OROBI (6200') at 1115 hours.

Wed. 24 May. At OROBI. Held Court. Also paid advance of wages to indentured labourers. Inspected Cirahona Plantation.

Thurs. 25 May. Left OROBI 0600 hours. Followed graded road and arrived SIKI Mission Rest House at 1540 hours. Height 6000'.

Fri. 26 May. Left SIKI 0740 hours. Arrived UI 1105 hours. Met Father DIXY here on his return journey from Kanosi. Many matters to discuss with him, so decided to remain for the night. This place about 600'.

Sat. 27 May. Left UI 0700 hours. Followed graded road for 12 minutes. Then climbed for an hour until the summit of KUBBA - KU (over 7000') was reached. Glorious view from here. Aile Island can be seen in one direction and Kanosi district in another. The buildings on Maraoi Plantation (5 days walk away) could clearly be seen. Descended for 2½ hours to the Vanapa River. Followed river for 1½ hours, crossing and re-crossing it 3 times in the process. Climbed for about an hour and then descended to a camping place known as IRONO (2800') which was reached in pouring rain.

Sun. 28 May. Left IRONO 0730 hours. Followed a native path and after extremely rough going reached MAHE Road Camp (1500') at 1110 hours. The two ML overseers in charge of road work are based here.

Mon. 29 May. Left MAHE 0900 hours. Followed about 1½ hours travelled along the newly-completed graded road, climbing about 1000' in the process. Then followed the long, gradual descent to MARAOI which was reached at 1445 hours. Continued on to KANDOLA Plantation, arriving there at 1600 hours.

Tues. 30 May. At KANDOLA attending to some ML matters.

Wed. 31 May. Left by lorry at 0730 hours and came to within 5 miles of KIKIKI Plantation. Walked that distance and was then taken by car to GSI Plantation where Mr. P.D. Ross put me up for the night.

Thurs. 1 June. Left 0745 hours and walked to GU GU Plantation, arriving there at 1210 hours. Lunched there and caught a canoe which landed me at Kairua Station at 1520 hours.



GOILALA SUB - STATION.

On arrival at Goilala I was met by A.D.C., Capt. O'CONNOR and the P.O., Lieut. ROBINSON. Inspected the police and found them to be a well-drilled body of men. Discovered that Lieut. Robinson, who was a Sergeant - Major in a Militia Battalion for some years before joining ARMA, takes a keen personal interest in the police and often drills them himself. Goilala is about 7500' and the cold is quite intense at night, making it necessary for the A.D.C. to keep a fire going in his place from about 4 p.m. onwards. Fires are also maintained in the police barracks and gal. Inspected the Station garden. About 14 acres have been planted with sweet potatoes; but it will be at least 8 months before the Station will get any food from the garden. Inspected gal, which is a stoutly constructed building with a barbed wire fence surrounding it. Mountain prisoners have to be carefully watched, otherwise they are off in a flash. A new store is under construction. Quite a number of officials from surrounding villages reported to me. They had no complaints except about shortage of garden foodstuffs caused by many months of unseasonable weather. From what I could see, Capt. O'Connor maintains firm control and is just in his dealings with these semi-wild people.

KAMISI POLICE CAMP.

Lieut. HARDY in charge. Inspected the buildings and found them to be in good order. Prisoners were busy on excavation work which will increase the size of the parade ground. Police were inclined to be slack. They were addressed by me and then handed over to Sgt.-Major ROMA who accompanied my patrol. He subjected them to some intensive training during my stay at the Post. Depressed upon Lieut. Hardy that he must at all times exercise firm control over his police. Dealt with several complaints made by village natives against KAMISI police. With the exception of a charge of rape against a policeman (he received 12 months), the other charges could not be substantiated though they left me with the uneasy feeling that the police had been playing up. From what I can see, Lieut. Hardy has put plenty of energy into his work during his seven months at Kamisi, but his youth and inexperience are a handicap. He will soon be relieved by Lieut. Robinson and will then proceed to Goilala, where he will be stationed until arrangements can be made to transfer him to Kairua for further experience. Inspected garden. About 4 acres planted with sweet potatoes. Instructed P.O. to plant at regular intervals.

NATIVE MORALS.

A total of 53 Village Constables reported to me at various places. I was also visited by a number of Village Councillors and Chiefs. They displayed very little interest in the outside world and practically no interest in the war news. The only thing they associate the war with is the additional carrying that had to be done by their people during the past few years (carry-ing for Spotting Stations and Comandos). I spoke to officials and chiefs at some length about the habit the people have of dancing for months on end during which they do no work at all. Gardens are neglected and soon become prey to pigs. They nodded their heads in agreement with my arguments in favour of shorter dances at more frequent intervals; but it is doubtful if they will alter their ways unless the Government compels them to do so.

CRIME.

On my way, I met a party of police and 55 prisoners from Goilala on their way to Kairua. They had been arrested as a result of an upheaval in the Gane - Ilai - Hulave - Kiloipe Districts. It all started over the killing of a pig. In the fighting which followed several men were killed. A number of pigs were killed and several houses burned. Capt. O'Connor and Lieut. Robinson set off to arrest the participants. They succeeded in arresting 56 men without bloodshed. One man subsequently escaped and is still at large. A.D.C. informed me that there are still several men to be apprehended, but it will be difficult to arrest them until the district returns to something like normal. It is felt that a sojourn in Kairua gal will have the necessary deterrent effect. Mountain people loathe and fear the coastal regions.

VILLAGE GROUPS.

At only two places, WAIKAPI and OROU was I able to buy quantities of garden foodstuffs for my police and carriers. Elsewhere, whilst the people

VILLAGE GATHERING (Cont.)

are not starving, they are on short rations. The almost incessant rains from last December until the beginning of May is responsible for the short-  
age. However, there has been a noticeable improvement in weather conditions during the past few weeks, and the food shortage should soon be a thing of the past.

ROADS.

From ARCEPOKIA to KUEHIA there is a vehicle road 11 miles in length. From KUEHIA to KOME there is a graded bridle path. It was in a bad state of repair, so much so that I sent word back to A.D.O., Kairuaia instructing him to send a Patrol Officer immediately to organise village labour to carry out clearing and drainage work. A requisition for tools sent to Regional H was promptly fulfilled and the work is now well under way.

After leaving KOME the track is native until KUPOGORO Rest House (between IVARE and GOLLALA) is reached. The Mission Fathers from KERRAU Mission are at present pegging this portion preparatory to commencing the work of making a bridle path. From KUPOGORO Rest House to GOLLALA there is a bridle path in good order. Nothing can be done to improve the track running through KOSIPI Swamp, but I hear that the Mission people intend to peg a route which will skirt the swamp. After leaving KOSIPI, I followed a native track to WAIKAPI, which was in poor shape. From WAIKAPI to OBOU there is a Mission made bridle path in good order. This path continues on to KAKIPI. However, I did not follow it, but instead took a native track over the mountain which saved me about two hours. From KAKIPI to OMOKE there is a well graded bridle path, but I again elected to follow a native track which took me through a couple of native villages I would not otherwise have seen. Practically all the roads in the mountains were made under Mission supervision. They did it for their own purposes, but the fact remains that Government Patrols and village natives are only too glad to make full use of them. The road from OMOKE to KAKOSIA is being made the subject of a separate report.



T. GRAHAMSLAW, Major, D.O.  
2/6/44.

Major

W.H.  
2/6



MEDICAL.

The outbreak of dysentery in the YALOOE and HULAVA valleys, which was caused by runaway workers from the Orange - Kanoia road construction gang, resulted in 15 deaths up till the time of my arrival. These figures were supplied to me by the Mission Fathers at FATH. The outbreak appeared to be well on the wane when I passed through. Since my return to Kairuki, I have learned that W. Litwood will be visiting the affected areas on his way here from Gwahlir. Supplies of drugs have already been sent to Gollala to await his arrival there.

2. There were not many patients in Gollala hospital when I visited it. Generally speaking, the natives in the Gollala area are a healthy lot.

3. There is need for a Native Medical Officer at KAMBISI, where there is really more sickness amongst the people than in the case in the colder climes of Gollala. O.I.C., Kambisi has a population of about 10,000 to control. According to him the incidence of yaws is much higher than one would expect amongst people who live in altitudes ranging from 3000' upwards.

T. GRAHNSLAW, Major, D. O.

WLG  
25/6

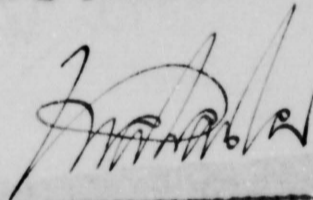
WLG  
25/6

of

MAJOR T. GRAHAMSLAW.

REPORT ON POLICE WHO ACCOMPANIED THE PATROL.

<u>Reg. No.</u>	<u>Name.</u>	<u>Remarks.</u>
506	Sgt.-Major BORUA	Excellent man in every respect. Has a good air of command and is respected by the men under him. Is well known to, and respected by the mountain natives.
1323	L/Cpl. UMINI	Accompanied patrol as far as Gollala where, at ADO's request, he was placed on that Station's strength. UMINI is a solid dependable type of man, but consider he should be given a refresher course at RPC HQ before receiving further promotion.
986	L/Cpl. MANAIA	This N.C.C. joined the patrol at Gollala, where he was replaced by L/Cpl. UMINI. MANAIA seems to me to be quite a good man. ADO Gollala informed me that he had been several years in the mountains without a change, and was beginning to get a bit slack. A change to District HQ should do him good.
1593	Const. MORAHAFI	Good man. Smart appearance. Carries out orders promptly and efficiently.
1643	" KAIRI-BIDOO	Almost useless. No brains.
1234	" NOLA	Average. Well trained but lacks initiative.
2743	" UENI	Average policeman. No go in him.

  
 Major  
T. GRAHAMSLAW, Major, D.O.

*Extract  
Co  
R/c*

276

*MLL  
25/6*



AUSTRALIAN MILITARY FORCES

30/3/43

7

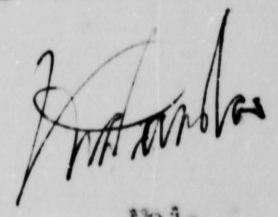
HQ  
SOUTHERN REGION  
ANGAU PORT MORESBY  
19 June 44.

DO KAIRUKU

R/R 23 of 43-44 - KAIRUKU

Receipt of the above report is acknowledged.

2. Reference HQ for KAMBISI, DADS minutes "this is on the agenda."



Hqj.  
ADDS & HQ.

Copy:  
HQ ANGAU (DS)

*Doc Kelly*  
*27/626 JUN Recd*  
*Doc 26/6*





TERPITORY OF PAPUA AND NEW GUINEA

# PATROL REPORT

District of CENTRAL Report No. 30 of 43/44 (KAIRUKU)

Patrol Conducted by WO 11 H. F. SACKA

Area Patrolled Mekeo District

Patrol Accompanied by Europeans.....

Natives.....

Duration—From 8/5/1944 to 16/5/1944

Number of Days.....

Did Medical Assistant Accompany?.....

Last Patrol to Area by—District Services...../...../19.....

Medical .... /...../19.....

Map Reference.....

Objects of Patrol.....

DIRECTOR OF DISTRICT SERVICES  
AND NATIVE AFFAIRS,  
PORT MORESBY.

Forwarded, please.

/ /19

.....  
*District Commissioner*

Amount Paid for War Damage Compensation .... £.....

Amount Paid from D.N.E. Trust Fund .... £.....

Amount Paid from P.E.D.P. Trust Fund .... £.....

.....  
.....  
.....



Popu

Females  
in Child  
Birth  
M

No. 30 213/44

Report of patrol made by H.F. Jacka  
to the MEKEO District

Date left Station 8th May Date returned 16th May

Purposes of patrol, to inspect all Villages and Roads.  
To carry out inspection and report on Rice growing areas

Patrol accompanied by W.O. Burchett Med. Asst.  
R.P.C. 2  
Carriers Average 20

Previous Patrol Report Kairuku No. 29

Last Patrol to Area made on 17/1/44

Medical Services on 9/1/44

RPC report passed to CO RPC 12/7/44

Report on Rice growing in  
MEKEO provided to AGRIC SR. J  
3 pages

Pop

B  
F  
Males  
Females  
in Child  
Birth

DAILY DIARY

MONDAY MAY 8th

As per written instructions from the ADO Kairuku, left Kairuku on the launch NANONA and proceeded across Hall Sound up the ETHEL River to BIOTO arriving at 1130 hrs. Inspected the Village and departed at 1330 arriving at INAWABUI at 1500. Assisted W.O.Burchett with Medical inspection of Village.

TUESDAY MAY 9th

Left INAWABUI at 0930 and arrived at EBOA at 1200 Hrs. Inspected Village and proceeded to INAWAIA arriving at 1230. During the afternoon inspected INAWAIA village and discussed the Rice growing project with Sgt.Broadhurst.

WEDNESDAY MAY 10th

Proceeded to and inspected INAWAIA, EBOA, INSUBAIBUA rice fields. During afternoon, went to the Rice Mill and saw W.O.Williams. Visited the Mill plot with him.

THURSDAY MAY 11th

Inspected Labour at Nekeo Rice Mill. Left at 0945 arriving at ORIROPETANA at 1200. Inspected Village with Med. Asst. Left at 1400 hrs, proceeded to BEBEO. Inspected Village and Rice fields.

FRIDAY MAY 12th

Left at 0900, proceeded to INAVAUNI arriving at 1030. Inspected Rice fields of INAVAUNI and IMOUNGA. Carried out medical inspection.

SATURDAY MAY 13th

Left INAVAUNI at 0730, passing through RARAI and AMO AMO Inspected Rice fields on route arriving at BEIPA at 1430. During afternoon inspected BEIPA and AIPANA villages.

SUNDAY MAY 14th

Medical inspection of those two villages occupied most of the day. Left BEIPA at 1700 and arrived at INAWI at 1800. Inspected village.

MONDAY MAY 15th

Assisted W.O.Burchett and left INAWI at 1030 arriving at BEREINA at 1230 continued on through ABIARA to MAIA ERA arriving at 1700

TUESDAY MAY 16th

Inspected Labour at MAIA ERA and proceeded along the be to PINAPAKA. Looked at the Village thence per canoe across the Bay to Kairuku arriving at 1430.



13	Females in Child Birth
F	

(Cont) ROADS, VILLAGES, BRIDGES, REST HOUSES, AGRICULTURE 4

ROADS

The roads were, generally, in good order. From BIOTO to INAWAIA was well cleaned, dry and firm. From INAWAIA to ORIROPETANA is not so good. Water is, and has been lying here for some months. It shows no sign of drying up, and in view of the fairly consistent rainfall here, it will remain in this condition indefinitely.

From ORIROPETANA to BEBEO had been recently cleaned, and was quite dry and firm.

From BEBEO to INAVAUNI muddy in places and soft throughout, but clean and drying out.

From INAVAUNI to BEIPA, again a little soft in places but clean and generally firm.

From BEIPA to the coast, passing through INAWI and BEREINA, was in good condition. This road goes through grassland and gets plenty of sunshine. The roads throughout the patrol were in good order, due to the absence of rain, but in the wet season, practically all roads are affected and in most cases, impassable.

VILLAGES

All villages visited were up to standard. There is much work to be done, particularly the rebuilding of houses etc, but this will not take place until some of the male population, at present under contract are released.

The Village Constables were informed, that, when any Natives are repatriated, their first work should be the fixing up of their villages.

BRIDGES

These are a source of annoyance both to us and the village people. Floods are continually washing bridges away, making the roads impassable, and, also the construction of these bridges a constant job. There is at present, only one bridge of any size and it is near INAWAUNI. It is in good order.

REST HOUSES

Generally in good order. The only thing wrong was at INAWI where the W.C. had collapsed. The Vill. Const. was told to construct a new one.

AGRICULTURE

Food is of the usual variety. RICE, BANANAS, SWEET POTATOES etc grow well in this locality.

The constant buying of the Food Supply Section, may be taking toll, as several villages informed me that food was short.

However, I would say that in the next few months, when the new planting come into bearing, food should be sufficient for their needs.

Rice growing will be dealt with in a separate report.

13  
F  
Females  
in Child  
Birth

F

2

As stated in the report, W.O. Burdett, Medical Asst. of Kairua  
accompanied the patrol.  
The majority of the Village people were seen and the Asst. was very  
busy treating injuries and giving injections for YAWS.

As far as possible, the inspections were carried out in the morning  
before the women and children went out to their gardens.

Village Constables and Councilors were advised to bring sick  
in the villages.  
They were instructed to bring all cases to the hospital at  
Kairua without delay.  
Some cases of people being bitten were reported and the Asst.  
visited these villages, especially out to the hills and by  
the side of the road, but no cases were reported as a result  
of his visit. The Asst. was very busy and had a little trouble  
in getting to the hills.

A full report of the number of cases treated and persons on the  
patrol will be submitted by W.O. Burdett.

*W.O. Burdett*  
11/17

*H*  
.....  
H. V. Jackson, M.D.



op

Females  
in Child  
Birth

ANNUAL REPORT FOR 1944.

ARAU,  
LACONOP DISTRICT,  
IN MALAYA,  
10 JUNE 44.

7

Ref. 447/30/1

ARAU S. M.,  
IN, Southern Region,  
ARAU, Port Moresby.

ANNUAL REPORT No. 30 - 44/44, by W. H. H. THOMPSON.

The above report contains much valuable information.

2. The rebuilding of dilapidated houses in the Mekeo has been retarded by the long delay in the return of I/L's from the WAPLA road. There is plenty of work for these natives to do in their villages, and also they can assist in the rice culture.
3. AGRICULTURE. I am glad to say the activities of the Food Supply Section as regards native food purchases has now ceased. A careful check was always kept on their activities in this respect.
4. RICE GROWING. With so many able-bodied men away still, I think the Mekeo villages have done very well in planting approx. 138 acres this year. The mill and scumge planted by signed - on Labour is now a matter for the Agricultural Dept and with a change in the management, I hope better results can be expected.

*W.H.H.*  
*11/17*

W. H. H. Thompson  
Major  
W. H. H. THOMPSON, Major, D.S.

DS.

30 | 5 | 36

KAIRUKU C.I.

42-43

43-44

P/R No. 31/43-44.

STATION :- KAIRUKU

DISTRICT :- LAKEKAMU.

AREA PATROLLED :- MEKEO and WAIMA VILLAGES.

PATROL OFFICER :- CAPT. B.W. FAITHORN.

DATE :- 17/28 JANUARY 1944.



W.D. 20  
DS. 30/3/36

KAIRUKU

No 3/ Kairuku, I.D.  
of 43-44

Report of a Patrol by B.W. Faithorn, Captn; A.D.O.  
To MEKEO and WAIMA villages  
Date left Station:- 17/1/44. Date returned to Station:- 28/1/44  
Purpose of patrol:- To arrest N/L/ Deserters.(2) Speed up rice planting.  
European Personnel -----  
Royal Papuan Constabulary:- 1.Lee Corpl & 8.constables. Carriers average 20  
Last Patrol by Captn I.J. O'Malley to Mekoo P/R No.24/43-44, Nov & Dec 43.  
(a) District Services Field Staff -----  
(b) Medical Assistant on -----

MONDAY. 17/1/44. Left Kairuku on the tide at 11.am per "GAWA" with stores for Gailala sub-station. Arrived Aropokina at 2.pm. Unloaded "GAWA" and checked Gailala stores into store shed. Camped for the night at Aropokina. Sent 2. R.P.C. constables to Bioto and Inawabui villages for carriers.

TUESDAY. 18/1/44. Left Aropokina at 8.am. It was necessary to use women as carriers owing to the scarcity of male natives due to maximum recruitment for Army. Arrived at INAWABUI at 11.40.am. Sent for V.Cs and Councillors of adjacent villages. On their reporting all were instructed to arrest N/L deserters and to bring before me every able bodied native with less than 4 children. They were strictly warned against withholding information that could lead to the arrest of deserters. Later in the day a number of native presented themselves and had their "Leave Passes" endorsed, ~~and~~ they were reminded of the date of expiry. 2 natives were taken into custody for being in possession of "UNOFFICIAL" Leave Passes. At sundown, with due ceremony, the G.O.Cs letter addressed to Village Constables and Councillor in all parts of Papua was read out to the V.Cs and Councillors.

WEDNESDAY. 19/1/44. Left INAWABUI for INAWAIA at 8.am. Arrived at INAWAIA at 11.am and camped in the rest house. Found Sergt Burke who is running the rice mill installed there. Discussed with him the subject of rice growing and native labour matters. At about 6.pm during the cool of the evening and with due ceremony G.O.Cs letter to Village Constables and Councillors of Papua was read out to those present.

THURSDAY. 20/1/44. Despatched 8 deserters to Kairuku under police escort via Bioto and canoe. Patrol party left INAWAIA at 7.50.am for BEIPA. I arrived at the Rice Mill (JESUBAIBWA) at 8.20.am. Arrested a deserter from Captn O'Malleys patrol. Continued on and reached BEIPA at 11.40.am and camped in the Rest House. Later called on the Reverend Father Pinje of the R.C. Mission and accepted his kind invitation to lunch. Later returned to Rest House where 5 police constables reported with a letter from Captn O'Malley which stated that he was returning the constables Kairuku with instructions to round up the carriers who had deserted from his Kunimaipa-Gailala patrol. I despatched one of the constables with Captn O'Malley's letter to Kairuku together with a letter of mine to BEIPA informing him that I would keep Captn O'Malley's police and deal with O'Malley's deserters. During the afternoon all police constables were sent out to search for and apprehend deserters and bring to me any able bodied native unable to give a good reason for his presence in the district.

FRIDAY. 21/1/44. Remaining at BEIPA. At noon 16 natives were brought in by the police. On examination those who were in possession of Leave Passes and Exemption Papers were released. 9 natives were taken into custody.

SATURDAY. 22/1/44. Remaining at BEIPA the centre of a big group of villages. V.C. ALANO of BEIPA reported that there was a "Big Sickness" in his village and that many people had died during the past few weeks. Later I visited the Reverend Father Pinjet and discussed certain matters with him. He confirmed to me that 30 natives had died in Beipa and neighbouring villages during December and January chiefly through dysentery and pneumonia. The RevFather told me that his Mission was doing all they could to deal with what he described as a "mild epidemic" of dysentery and pneumonia but that they were handicapped through being short of the Sulpha drugs necessary to combat it. I asked the Father

Brief survey of country passed through. The Mekec and Waima districts visited on this patrol lie in the coastal area of the Kairuku sub-district. The country is so well known and has been reported upon so frequently in previous reports that repetition here is unnecessary.

ROADS. A Government road runs from Aropokina right through the Mekec villages. The roads and tracks during the time of the patrol were in fairly good condition with the exception of that stretch on the left bank of the St Joseph (Angabunga) river between JESUBAIBUA and ORIPO-PETANA villages which, owing to the flooding of the river, was a foot or more under water.

BRIDGES. The majority of those crossed were in fairly good order. Where repairs were considered necessary the appropriate instructions were given. During the N.W. season when the heavy rains are on only minor repairs of a temporary nature can be expected.

REST HOUSES. The rest houses were all in good order. The Mekec and Waima districts possess some of the finest rest houses I have seen in the Territory. The European travelling public are indeed well served with rest houses.

VILLAGES. All the villages visited were clean and tidy. A few were damp and muddy on the outskirts, recent heavy rains being the cause of this.

DESERTERS. 78 deserters were apprehended and sent into Kairuku. 3 others were given permission to remain in their villages until they were well enough to travel to Kairuku. 22 natives of taxable age who had probably dodged previous "Call Ups" were also sent to Kairuku.

*R. W. Gordon* Capt'n & A.D.O.  
LAKEKAMU DISTRICT

"G" Branch

for action and returns.

Added 8/24  
Office List  
for ADDS. 7/2

- ① Copy of papers marked to GSI NCF, done by [unclear] 8/2/46
- ② [unclear] W
- ③ [unclear]



SATURDAY 22nd:contd to put in a request for the drugs required and that I would forward it on to the D.O. This was done and within 72 hours that the drugs were received by the Mission. 16 deserters and leave expired natives were despatched to Kairuku.

SUNDAY 23rd Left WIPA for WAIMA at 7.30 am. Reached INWI at 8 am. Met Father Hubert who was just returning from attending to a sick woman in the village. I checked up on able bodied natives in the village and endorsed Leave Passes at the same time reminding them of the dates on which they were to return to Kairuku. Arrived at WAIMA rest house at 12 noon and camped. Sent for all WAIMA and KIVORI village constables and Councilors. I told them of the object of my visit and instructed them to apprehend all deserters in their villages and bring all able bodied natives to me.

MONDAY 24/1/44. At WAIMA. Sent out police searching for deserters. A number of village natives reported. Leave Passes endorsed. Several natives arrested for deserting and others held for recruitment.

TUESDAY 25/1/44. At WAIMA. Police out on the job of searching villages, gardens and surrounding bush country for deserters believed to be in the area. Just before Noon W/O Vesper of the fruit buying section called in to report to me his presence in the district. His visit was most opportune. It was arranged between us that towards the end of his purchases and while the village natives were still gathered together on the beach I would descend upon them with my police. The plan was most successful. 21 able bodied natives were brought in, interrogated and dealt with. 16 natives under escort left WAIMA in the fruit barge for Kairuku at 3 PM. 28 natives had left earlier in the day for Kairuku along the beach road. Total for the day 44.

WEDNESDAY 26/1/44. So that no news of my plans for arresting more deserters could leak out, I awoke the police without previous warning at 5 am and ordered them forthwith to leave for the KIVORI group of villages. I followed with one native an hour later. Two natives walked straight in to me along the track and after examining their papers one of them was taken into custody being over-due reporting at Kairuku. I returned to WAIMA at 11 am. Later in the day the police returned. The day was not a successful one, only 2 arrests. ~~xxxx~~ Sent for the V.Cs of KIVORI and Councillors of that group of villages and questioned on the whereabouts of their boys. I was told that they had gone bush. I suspected one of the V.Cs and an old Councillor of harbouring deserters and acting under instructions of D.O. Kairuku these with a number of other natives were sent to Kairuku.

THURSDAY 27/1/44. A.Cs IRIRI and ABODA reported with 9 natives apprehended in the MOU area. 6 of these natives were released on producing their Leave Passes. The other 3, being deserters, were taken into custody. A.C. IRIRI did a good job. He is a very reliable COMBARI and one of the best on this patrol with 16 arrested natives being used as carriers I left WAIMA at 8 am for KAIRUKU via MOU. The crossing of FOREKE creek by canoe was a slow business. I proceeded ahead to Waiers plantation owned by the R.C. Mission. After a short spell there continued on to MOU which place I reached at 12 noon. The police and carriers arrived at 1.15 pm. Ice Cpl MUEJA reported that 2 carriers who were deserters had runaway. I ordered the Ice Cpl to take 2 constables with him and not to return until he found the runaways. After the remaining police and deserters had been fed all the deserters were despatched under a strong escort to Kairuku. A.Cs IRIRI and KIBENI remained with me.

FRIDAY 28/1/44 Ice Cpl MUEJA reported this A.M. without the two natives he was sent to apprehend yesterday. I told him to go back and keep searching. This N.C.O. is intelligent but like most Papuan N.C.Os lacks initiative and that sustained effort so necessary in the pursuit of the elusive Waimas and scheming Kekeos. Patrol party left MOU for Kairuku at 8.30 am. Met "GAWA" sent out by D.O. to pick me up at MOINO creek. Boarded launch and arrived at Kairuku at 11.30 am. Duly reported to District Officer.





DS

31 | 3 | 3

KAIRUKU

44-44

5 / R No.

STATION:-

Kairuku

DISTRICT:-

Kaikoura

DETAILS:-

Taking over

of main main Police Post.

OFFICER:-

W. A. Jackson

DATE:-

21 June 1944.

SPECIAL REPORT ON THE TAKING OVER OF THE MANU MANU POLICE POST

Under written instructions from the P.O. Kairuku, I boarded the Launch "GAWA" en route to Manu Manu. Due to strong South East and heavy seas, we were forced to lay off Hisiu Point and proceeded to Manu Manu arriving at 0800 on Wednesday 21st June. W/O Blencow, O.I.C. Police Post met me, and I informed him of the new District boundaries and that MANU MANU was again under the P.O. Kairuku.

During the afternoon, with the assistance of the O.I.C. I took over Office Records and files as per instructions. Trespassers from Plantations were also taken over and sent to Kairuku under Police escort.

On Thursday 22nd. I proceeded up the Manosia River per Native canoe arriving at Manosia Plantation at 1445 hrs. I informed the manager, Mr. Telemma of the District changes and left Circular instructions to that effect for distribution to Mariboi, Veimaui and Doa Plantations.

On Friday 23rd, per courtesy of Mr. Telemma I travelled to the AROA River by motor truck, crossed and proceeded to the Aroa Plantation and met Mr. Pollard. Having conveyed the information to him, I then went on to OBU, passing through Hisiu Pt. Mr. Proven of Hisiu and Mr. Ross of OBU were informed accordingly.

Saturday 24th. I proceeded part of the way per truck and continued walking to TELMA passing through OBU OBU Creek Plantation arriving at 1330hrs. From there per canoe to Kairuku

A.D.D.S.

Forwarded to you in duplicate.  
I have no comments to make.  
Vide your I633 of the 21 Jul 44

*H.F. Jaaka*  
..... /  
H.F. Jaaka P/O/

*W.H.H. Jeff*  
P.O.  
24.7.44

*1633 = Ack of 7/44 for June 21/44*

*A.D.D.S.*  
*Approved by P.O.*  
*20/7/44*  
*1633*



5 / R No.

STATION:- Karuku

DISTRICT:- Kapakapu

DETAILS:- Mem. Kanosa Area.

M. Courts - Trade Store

Transfer

OFFICER:- Maj WKN Thompson

DATE:- 8/2 - 4/3 1945.

Recd 10/3/45.

AFRICAN MILITARY FORCE  
REPORT ON SPECIAL PATROL TO HESIU AND KANOSIA

BY  
MAJOR W.H.H. THOMPSON D.O.



For the purpose of : (1) Holding Courts where necessary  
(2) Transferring Trade Store from HESIU to near KANOSIA.

WEDNESDAY 23 FEB 45. The only launch in commission out of three, the HONONIA, managed to struggle to DEMBIA with the Patrol Party. From there walked to a few miles other side of OROI ( NAPA ) village, about 15 miles, where Mr. F.D. ROSS of OBU kindly met me with a car and took me to his pltn. Road to Cape SUKILING in good order, so was the invaluable telephone line, which I do hope we can be allowed a couple of line boys to keep in order. There are so often police matters for instance, for which immediate action can be taken, if as is now the case, the Managers of Estates at HESIU and KANOSIA can ring this Office up.

THURSDAY 1 MAR 45. Visited OBU, AROA and HESIU Pt Estates, carried on N/L business with Managers and held Court where necessary. Also visited the Trade Store temporarily housed at PAJIS Pltn, HESIU beach. Cpl SHIFFRINS in charge. Arranged for the movement of his trade goods to overseer's camp at the lower end of the KANOSIA - OMORE Road. Thence to KANOSIA Pltn. N/T kindly arranged to TOU TOU ( AROA ) River ~~at~~ at AGATWARA crossing by Mr. POLLARD, Manager of AROA and from thence to KANOSIA by Mr. M. MENA.

FRIDAY 2 MAR 45. Remained at KANOSIA. Managers of all the Rubber Pltns in the vicinity brought their Court Cases to me, also transacted N/L business with Managers and interviewed PON TUNG, a Chinaman, particulars of whose relations were wanted by Civil Affairs Dept. Cpl SHIFFRINS, N/L Overseer, lower end of KANOSIA OMORE Road reported. All well with his work, and progress satisfactory. He had prepared a house in the first N/L Overseer's camp for the Trade Store between KANOSIA and MARIBOI.

SATURDAY 3 MAR 45. Finished off Court work etc at KANOSIA and then returned to AROA and OBU the same way as I came. Made final arrangements removal T/Store.  
SUNDAY 4 MAR 45. Per "GWA" from HESIU beach to Station. Arrived there 1350 hours. Brought back with me over £1000 takings from T/Store whilst at HESIU.

REMARKS

TRADE STORE. On 5 March 45, "GWA" transferred Cpl SHIFFRINS and his Assistant with all stock to KANOSIA - MARIBOI site. Have sent signal to GOLLIA that all workers on road and their village people to be given every opportunity to visit the KANOSIA Trade Store.

JUDICIAL. A deal of Court Work got through, also JM held several times. A number of Deserters and N/L's A.W.L. dealt with. All Pltns had been recently inspected by both Capt ROSS D.O. and WOOL L.J. O'MALLEY. I think relations between Employers and Employees are quite satisfactory. We are fortunate to have such experienced Managers as Messrs. ROSS, PROVEN, POLLARD, HONONIA, HUNTERSON and TALLEY in this District. The younger Managers seem also to be having very little trouble with their labour.

W.H.H. Thompson

Major, D.O.

(W.H.H. THOMPSON)

9th March '45

*[Handwritten initials and scribbles]*



DS.

311 3. 13

SPECIAL REPORT

STATION:-

DISTRICT:- LAKEKAMU

SUBJECT:- TRACK REPORT - PORT MORESBY -  
BULLDOG. & FROM BULLDOG TO  
HALL SOUND.

OFFICER:- LT. E. R. SNOOK.

DATE:- 17 OCTOBER 1943.

Subject: MOVEMENT OF HORSES PT MORESBY TO MARKHAM VALLEY  
APPENDIX 1 to CE

Details ref track, fodder and river crossings.

1. The following details are extracted from several recce reports ref horse tracks and MR roads.
2. Track details are as follows

<u>MILEAGE</u>	<u>TRACK</u>	<u>REMARKS</u>
12	PT MORESBY - LALOKI R	MT Road
12	LALOKI R - KAREMA	Jeep Track
	( KAREMA - DOURA	( Flat country, heavily
	(	( timbered, swampy in places
30	( DOURA - GALLEY REACH CROSSING	( Sharp, broken difficult country at edge of foothills fronting swamps.
40	GALLEY REACH CROSSING - OROI	MT road
14	OROI - DELENA	Good track - partly developed as MT Road.
15	DELENA ↓ AROPOKINA	Undulating forested countr with hard sandy surface. Apparently traversable by horses without further development.
50	AROPOKINA - BIBEO	MT Rd, under water in wet season. In use mainly between AROPOKINA and INAWAL.
5	BEBEO - INAYAUNI	Old MT road.
19	INAYAUNI - MAIPA	Mule track. Requires a fx few repairs (estimated 20 natives for one week).
23	MAIPA - KAWPAW	Survey line lightly cleared and blazed in Jun 43. Keeps to foothills. Firm clay and loam soils growing medium forest. Apparently can be developed easily as bridle track.
17	KAWPAW - GRIMM PT	Heavily timbered country with thick undergrowth on foothills fronting flats. Flat impassable due to swamps and many meandering streams. A survey line was cut and blazed Jun 43.
5	GRIMM PT - KUNIMAIPA R	Follow edge of foothills fronting river. Undevelope d
8	KUNIMAIPA R - REINHOLD HIGHWAY	A track has been cut to 30 ft width for proposed tramline. Joins highway at Base Area DID.

FODDER

- 4 (A) Natural fodder (nature of grasses unknown)
- (1) To the jeephead at KAREMA fodder can be carried by vehs
  - (ii) KAREMA to GALLEY REACH. Apparently NO natural fodder.
  - (iii) GALLEY REACH to DELENA. Grasslands abundant over last



18 miles. Sporadic but useful in the wet or a store where plantations occur.

- (iv) DELEMA to INAUWANI. Grasses and abundant.
- (v) INAUWANI to MAIPA. Grasses intercurrent becoming less common to MAIPA.
- (vi) MAIPA to KAWPAW. Possibly a little grass.
- (vii) KAWPAW to GREEN POINT. Nil.
- (viii) GREEN POINT to REINHOLD HIGHWAY. Nil.
- (ix) REINHOLD HIGHWAY. A very little in first 13 miles, thereafter none to BUBIS CK.

#### SUGGESTIONS:-

- (i) Fodder to be carried by Jeeps to KAWPAW.
- (ii) Fodder to be landed at some point convenient to BUBIS to supplement natural fodders in stretches each way.
- (iii) Fodder to be offloaded at GREEN POINT.
- (iv) Fodder supplies to be shipped to BUBIS for later stages of route.

#### RIVER AND CREEK CROSSINGS.

Bdgs occur on the NI portions of track. Most other crossings will be forded. The following will be a swim for horses unless rafting is provided, say, by decked canoes.

BROKE R at KAREMA 200' wide. Depth and banks unknown.

MAIPA R at DOURA 200' wide. Depth and banks unknown.

GALLEY REACH CK (? swim) 100' wide.

AROA R (probably a bdg here).

ST JOSEPH R at TANA 177' wide with 6' water at S bank. N bank 4' high. S bank shelving.

AMOUNGA F between INAUWANI and MAIPA 234' wide bank 6' depth 12'.

MAIPA F between INAUWANI and MAIPA. Possibly fordable (4' depth when reported, probably less now).

AKAIFU R at MAIPA. Possibly a ford available (4' water to AKEVAI R).

Between MAIPA and KAWPAW are the OKANI R (16' deep) and URETA R (10 - 15' deep).

KOP MAIPA R. Wide deep and swift flowing. A raft might be brought from MAIPA.

COPY Report by Lieut. Snock.

CE/N/1674

HQ NG FORCE  
CE's Branch  
26 Feb 43.

CE NG FORCE

RECONNAISSANCE REPORT ON PROPOSED MULE TRACK  
FROM BULLDOG TO HALL SOUND.

REF MAPS WAU 4m to 1", YULE 4m to 1".

1. The object of this recon was to investigate the possibility of a MULE TRACK from BULLDOG to HALL SOUND.
2. Estimated time of recon 10 days.  
Actual time of recon 11 days.

3. ROUTE FOLLOWED

BULLDOG (WAU (L) W 0820) to OTAMAI (WAU (L) W 0415)  
distance approx 4 miles.  
Existing track has several small swamp patches.

4. OTAMAI to No 1 CAMP (WAU (L) W 0404) distance approx 10 miles.

Followed TIVERI River bank to junction KUNIMAIPA R.  
KUNIMAIPA R crossing (WAU (L) W 0113) approx 300' wet gap, deep fast water (approx 5 knots).

Followed central dividing ridges KURIAIA HILLS S.S.E. easy grades. Last 3 miles followed an old track.

5. No 1 CAMP to No 2 CAMP ((L) W 0230) approx 7 miles.

Followed dividing ridges S.S.E 3 miles. Ridge became too rough for mule track. Turned S.W. along flat spur for 3 miles. From spur down to CAMP 1 mile steep grade. This section unsuitable for mule track.

6. No 2 CAMP to No 3 CAMP (YULE (Q) A 9597)

Followed stream down W. 3 miles to heave swamp. Turned S. along foothills 3 miles, easy grades. Followed old track 4 miles W to a deserted native sago camp.

The foothills appear quite roadable. Track would have to follow contours well above swamp level.

7. No 3 CAMP to No 4 CAMP (YULE (Q) A 9292) (Two coconuts)  
approx 9 miles.

Followed old track W 1 mile through swamp to bank of LAKEKANU R. Followed bank of river downstream 3 miles. From the river bank inland from 100 yards to 1 mile there is high ground suitable for mule track and only a little clearing is required.

No. 4 CAMP is the starting point of an old existing track from LAKEKANU R to NEKRO area.

8. No 4 CAMP to No 5 CAMP (YULE (Q) B 0286) KAWPAW approx 9 miles.

Existing track can easily be improved for mule track.

9. No 5 CAMP to No 6 CAMP (YULE (Q) B 0979)

Existing track crosses three bad swamps but a higher location will be suitable for mule track.



10. No.6 CAMP to No 7 CAMP ((Q)B 1463) approx 15 miles.

Existing track follows low ridges SE 10 miles then turns S for 3 miles. The last 2 miles steep grades unsuitable for mule track.

11. No 7 CAMP to No 8 CAMP (Q B 2162 MAIPA.

Followed existing track 3 miles south through swamp to INOTINA. Section impossible for mule track. From INOTINA to MAIPA followed a cleared existing track 7 miles, crossing at AKAIFU R. at MAIPA 300' gap, fast shallow water.

12. From MAIPA to INAVAUNI and VEIPA (mission station) a good mule track exists.

13. Existing LORRY ROAD from BEBEO to AROPOKINA is at present under water and wet conditions may be expected for another two months. An all weather road could be located in the foothills east of the PUNEL River.

14. SUGGESTED ROUTE

BULLDOG to OTAMAI approx 8 miles  
Follow close to river bank to avoid swamps.  
Work estimated - 20 natives - 3 days.

OTAMAI to KUNIMAIPA R. 3 miles.  
Follow close to river bank.  
Work estimated - 20 N.L. - 1 day.

KUNIMAIPA R to No 4 CAMP (YULE (Q)A 9292) approx 32 miles.  
Follow foothills for 10 miles. Then follow close to LAKEKAMA R bank. 14 small river crossings. Suggest further recon of this section.  
Approx work estimated - 1 Engr Sec - 2 weeks  
- 50 N.L. - 2 weeks

KUNIMAIPA R CROSSING 300' gap.  
F.B.F. Raft and S.W.R. Ferry  
1 Sub Sec RAE - 2 days  
10 N.L. - 2 days.

No 4 CAMP to KAWPAW approx 9 miles.  
Existing track  
3 bridges 20', 35', 50' span.  
1 Engr Sec - 1 week  
50 N.L. - 1 week

KAWPAW to MAIPA approx 16 miles  
Follow foothills well above swamp.  
Suggest further recon for exact location.  
1 Engr Sec - 2 weeks  
50 N.L. - 2 weeks.

MAIPA to INAVAUNI 20 miles approx.  
Existing track requires a few repairs.  
20 N.L. - 1 week.

INAVAUNI to BEBEO  
Existing track.

BEBEO to POKAMA  
Existing road and track.

The time taken on this recon was not sufficient to mark exact location of track, but information gained indicates that it will not be difficult to get a mule track to BULL DOG and should a traffic road be later required, much of this information will assist the location of a road.

(Sgd) E.R. SNOOK Lieut

COPY

Subject - MULE TRANSPORT - MORESBY to BULLDOG

Headquarters  
Chief Engr's Branch,  
NEW GUINEA FORCE.  
Jan 44.

MEMO

Attached is a report on a possible horse pad from PT MORESBY to BULLDOG prepared from recon reports in Oct 43 together with an annotated map. The following additional notes are pertinent.

2. A party with horses now is investigating the route and has reported adversely. Great difficulties were experienced between PT MORESBY and DELENA; and the party has NOT yet approached the most difficult stretch - MAIPA to GRIMM PT.
3. Reports from this party are available at "Q" Branch MORESBY Base Sub-Area and should be consulted.
4. ANGAU also reports most adversely on any project to take animals through and are prepared to make available officers with local knowledge of sections of the route to discuss details with any officer.
5. The most difficult part (MAIPA to GRIMM PT) was surveyed in Jun 43. Although a narrow track was cleared at that time it is likely now to be so overgrown that it will be difficult to find.
6. Ref staging facilities near DELENA. Reports indicate that there is little habitation between DELENA and OROI. There is grass here in limited amount. ANGAU is prepared to make an officer with local knowledge available to discuss facilities when details of numbers of animals, proposed length of stay, season of year, etc. are known.